| AD-A059 02 | 7 NAV UPP JUL | AL UNDE ER BOUM 78 R NUSA | ERWATER NDS FOR L STRE C-TR-59 | SYSTE RATIO | MS CENT | P NORMS | LONDON ON FIN | N CONN NITE DI | NEW - | -ETC F | 10 12/ | 1 |
|-------------------|---------------------|------------------------------------|---|----------------|--|---------|------------------|-------------------|-------|--------|--------|---|
| 1 OF 2 AD59027 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | | | | | $\label{eq:product} \begin{array}{l} & 0 \\ & 0 $ | | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | | | | | | | |



PREFACE

This study was accepted in June 1978 as a dissertation submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in Mathematics at the University of Rhode Island.

The Technical Reviewer for this report was Dr. A. H. Nuttall (Code 313).

REVIEWED AND APPROVED: 18 July 1978

1. Nichola

D. L. Nichols Associate Technical Director for Engineering and Technical Support

The author of this report is located at the New London Laboratory, Naval Underwater Systems Center, New London, Connecticut 06320.

| | REPORT | DUCUMENTA | TIUN PAGE | BEFORE COMPLETING FORM |
|----------------------|--|--|---|---|
| R | EPORT NUMBER | / | 2. GOVT ACCESSION NO | D. 3. RECIPIENT'S CATALOG NUMBER |
| | TR 5915 | | | |
| T | ITLE (and Sublille) | | | S. TYPE OF REPORT & PERIOD COVERED |
| | UPPER BOUNDS | FOR RATIOS O | F L_p norms on finite | |
| | DIMENSIONAL S | PACES VIA SP | ECTRAL ESTIMATES | 5. PERFORMING ORG PERCET NUMBER |
| | | | | |
| | UTHOR(.) | | | S. CONTRACT OR GRANT NUMBER(.) |
| | Roy Leon Stre | it | | |
| | | | | |
| P | ERFORMING ORGANIZAT | TION NAME AND AD | DORESS | 10. PROGRAM ELEMENT. PROJECT, TASK |
| | Naval Underwa | ter Systems | Center (| AREA & WORK UNIT NUMBERS |
| | New London La | boratory | | |
| _ | New London, C | T 06320 | | |
| . (| CONTROLLING OFFICE | NAME AND ADDRES | 5 | 12. REPORT DATE |
| | Naval Underwa | ter Systems | Center | 13. NUMBER OF PAGES |
| | Newport, RI U. | 2840 | | 154 |
| . 1 | MONITORING AGENCY N | AME & ADDRESS(II | different from Controlling Office) | 15. SECURITY CLASS. (of this report) |
| | | | | UNCLASSIFIED |
| | | | | 15. DECLASSIFICATION DOWNGRADING |
| | | | | SCHEDULE |
| | Approved for p | public relea: | se; distribution unl | imited. |
| | Approved for p | public relea: | se; distribution unl | imited. |
| | Approved for p Distribution stateme | public relea: ENT (of the abotract | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 dillereni f | imited. |
| | Approved for p DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE | public relea: ENT (of the abstract S | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, il different i entered in Block 20, il different i | imited. |
| | Approved for p DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPL EMENTARY NOTE (EY-WORDS (Continue on L _D Normas | public relea: ENT (of the abstract S | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 dillerent f | imited. rom Report) Rayleigh Quotient |
| · · · | Approved for p DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE (EY-WORDS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa | public relea: ENT (of the abstract S reverse alde 11 nace ality | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different f | <pre>imited. rem Report) rem Report) Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homeore Deliver in the</pre> |
|). (| Approved for p DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE CEY WORDS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inequa | public relea: ENT (of the abotract s reverse elde II nece ality quality | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 dillerent i entered in Block 20, 11 dillerent i | <pre>imited. rem Report) *) Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms</pre> |
| | Approved for p DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE Lp Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Ineq Complex Polynd | public relea: ENT (of the abstract 's reverse alde If nece ality quality omials | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different i esery and identify by block numbe | <pre>imited. rom Report) Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation</pre> |
| | Approved for p DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE (EY-WORDS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inequa Complex Polyno | public releas | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different f entered in Block 20, 11 different f use 29 use 29 | <pre>imited. rem Report) Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation </pre> |
| | Approved for p DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE (EY-WORDS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inequa Complex Polyno | public releas | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different i escary and identify by block number ub 21 many and identify by block number | <pre>imited. rem Report) Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation f a real (complex) polynomial</pre> |
| · · · | Approved for Approved for DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE CEY WORDS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inequa Bernstein Inequa Complex Polyno The L _p 1 The L _p 1 | public relea: | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different i entered i entered in Block 20, 11 different i entered i entered i dentiffy by block number sitive integers p, 0 is shown to be the n | <pre>imited. rem Report) Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation f a real (complex) polynomial positive 2p-th root of a con-</pre> |
| | Approved for Approved for DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE EX. WORDS (Continue on L Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inequa Complex Polyno The Lop To of degree a strained quad | public releas | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different i entered i entered in Block 20, 11 different i entered | <pre>imited. rom Report) Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation f a real (complex) polynomial ositive 2p-th root of a con- n linear operator. The 2p-th</pre> |
| 5. (). 3 . 10 | Approved for Approved for DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE CEY WORDS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inec Complex Polyno The L _p n T _p of degree a strained quad root of the sp | public releas | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different f entered in Block 20, 11 different f bears and identify by block number www. 27 entered for the solution of certain us of this linear op | <pre>imited. ** Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation * f a real (complex) polynomial ositive 2p-th root of a con- n linear operator. The 2p-th erator is shown to give an</pre> |
| | Approved for Approved for DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE CEY WORDS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inequa Bernstein Inequa Complex Polyno The L ₂ p of degree a strained quad root of the sp upper bound for | public releas | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different i entered in Block 20, 11 different i boory and identify by block number with 2,7 beery and identify by block number sitive integers p, o is shown to be the p tian) form of certain us of this linear op mum of the ratio of | <pre>imited. ** Report Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation ** f a real (complex) polynomial ositive 2p-th root of a con- n linear operator. The 2p-th erator is shown to give an the Lop norm to the Lo norm of </pre> |
| | Approved for Approved for DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE EXPLEMENTARY NOTE Cartinue on Lp Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inec Complex Polyno STRACT (Continue on on The Lp no The Lp no Strained quad root of the sp upper bound for mp, where the | public releas | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different i entered in Block 20, 11 different i entered in Block 20, 11 different i entered in Block 20, 11 different i seary and identify by block number with 29 way and identify by block number sitive integers p, o is shown to be the p tian) form of certain us of this linear op mum of the ratio of taken over arbitrary | <pre>imited. ** Report Report Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation ** f a real (complex) polynomial ositive 2p-th root of a con- n linear operator. The 2p-th erator is shown to give an the L2 norm to the L2 norm of y real (complex) polynomials m the L2 norm to the L2 norm of </pre> |
| · · · | Approved for p DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE EXPORTS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inequa Bernstein Inequa Complex Polyno The L ₂ p The L ₂ p Strained quad root of the sp upper bound for The tase of | public release ENT (of the observect is reverse olde If necess ality quality omials reverse olde If necess norm, for pos- at most n ratic (hermi- pectral radius or the supremum is of real polyn | se; distribution unl metered in Block 20, il different i every and identify by block number sitive integers p, o is shown to be the p tian) form of certain us of this linear op mum of the ratio of taken over arbitrar, nomials, estimates o | <pre>imited. ** Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation * f a real (complex) polynomial ositive 2p-th root of a con- n linear operator. The 2p-th erator is shown to give an the Lop norm to the Lo norm of y real (complex) polynomials f the spectral radius of the </pre> |
| | Approved for Approved for DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE CEY WORDS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inequa Bernstein Inequa Complex Polyne Strained quad root of the sp upper bound for T _p , where the For the case of FORM 1472 | public releas | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different i escary and identify by block number where 24 beary and identify by block number sitive integers p, o is shown to be the p tian) form of certain us of this linear op mum of the ratio of taken over arbitrar nomials, estimates o | <pre>imited. ** Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation ** f a real (complex) polynomial ositive 2p-th root of a con- n linear operator. The 2p-th erator is shown to give an the L2p norm to the L2 norm of y real (complex) polynomials f the spectral radius of the </pre> |
| | Approved for p DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE CEY WORDS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inec Complex Polyno Strained quad root of the sp upper bound fo Tp, where the For the case of Markoff Inequal Strained quad root of the sp upper bound fo Tp, where the For the case of Markoff Inequal Strained quad root of the sp upper bound fo Tp, Where the For the case of Markoff Inequal Strained quad Strained q | public releas | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different i entered in Block 20, 11 different i beery and identify by block number with 20 with 20 wi | <pre>imited. ** Report Report ** Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation ** f a real (complex) polynomial ositive 2p-th root of a con- n linear operator. The 2p-th erator is shown to give an the L2 norm to the L2 norm of y real (complex) polynomials f the spectral radius of the </pre> |
| | Approved for p DISTRIBUTION STATEME SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE EXPORTS (Continue on L _p Normas Markoff Inequa Bernstein Inec Complex Polyne Astraned quad root of the sp upper bound for Tp, where the For the case of YORM 1473 | public releas | se; distribution unl entered in Block 20, 11 different i every and identify by block number sitive integers p, o is shown to be the p tian) form of certair us of this linear op mum of the ratio of taken over arbitrar nomials, estimates o | <pre>imited. ** main Report ** Rayleigh Quotient Spectral Estimates Homogeneous Polynomials Positive Forms Representation ** f a real (complex) polynomial ositive 2p-th root of a con- n linear operator. The 2p-th erator is shown to give an the L2p norm to the L2 norm of y real (complex) polynomials f the spectral radius of the \$ sub 2p \$ sub 2 \$</pre> |

20. (Cont'd) pi sub a

linear operator are obtained for all n and p for a general class of weighted L_{2p} norms of \mathcal{P}_{1} . For the case of complex polynomials defined on the unit circle, the spectral radius of the linear operator is determined explicitly. All the foregoing is extended to study the supremum of the ratio of the L_{2p} norm of the k-th derivative of \mathcal{P}_{1} to the L_{2} norm of \mathcal{P}_{2p} . The underlying technique is not restricted to polynomials, and a generalization of these results to arbitrary finite dimensional function spaces which satisfy a certain Nonnegativity Condition is presented.

In an entirely different direction, the algebraic properties of the linear operator mentioned above are studied and a Representation Theorem for the L_{2p} norm of polynomials π_n can be expressed as the 2p-th root of a finite linear combination of p-th powers of quadratic (hermitian) forms in the coefficients of π_n . Because of the strictly algebraic proof, the Representation Theorem is generalized to arbitrary finite dimensional function spaces on which an L_{2p} norm is defined.

Finally, an algorithm called the Quadratic Relaxation Algorithm is presented for the numerical computation of polynomials for which the ratio of L_{2p} norm to L_2 norm of π_n is a maximum. Although convergence is not proved, numerical evidence indicates that the Quadratic Relaxation Algorithm is rapidly convergent.

| NTIS DDC UNANNOUNCED | White Section |
|----------------------------|-------------------|
| JUSTI ICATION | |
| BY DISTRIBUTION/A | VAILABILITY CODES |
| Dist. | and / or SPECIAL |
| A | |

Table of Contents

| Chapter | Title | Page | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|---------|---|-------|--|--|--|--|--|--|--|--|--|--|--|--|
| I | Introduction | . 1 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| II | Complex Polynomials Defined on the | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | Unit Circle | . 17 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | A. Preliminaries | . 17 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | B. The Underlying Matrix and Its | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | Eigenstructure | . 25 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | C. Bound for Ratio of L _{2p} Norm to L ₂ Norm | . 34 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | D. The Spectral Radius $\lambda_{n,p}$ | . 41 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | E. Extension to Derivatives | • 59 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| III | Complex Finite Dimensional Function Spaces | . 68 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | A. General Spaces | . 68 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | B. Spaces Satisfying a Nonnegativity | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | Condition | . 76 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | C. Extension to Linear Transformations | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | on the Space | . 84 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | D. Complex Polynomials Defined on the | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | Unit Circle, Revisited | . 89 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| IV | Applications to Classical Orthogonal | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | Polynomials | • 92 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | A. Jacobi Polynomials | • 92 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | B. Gegenbauer (Ultraspherical) Polynomials | • 105 | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | C. Laguerre Polynomials | • 113 | | | | | | | | | | | | |

i

| Chapter | | | | <u>Titl</u> | e | | | | | | | | | | Page |
|---------|-----|----------------------|--------|-------------|------|-----|----|------------------|-----|----|----|---|---|---|------|
| | D. | Hermite | Polyn | omia | ls | | • | • • | | • | • | • | | | 116 |
| | E. | Remarks | | • • | • | • | • | • • | • | • | • | • | • | • | 117 |
| v | Rep | resentati | ion Th | eore | m | | • | • • | | | • | | | | 119 |
| | Α. | Permutah | ole Op | erat | ors | . 0 | n | ⊗ ^p v | • | | • | | • | • | 119 |
| | в. | The Repr | resent | atic | n 1 | he | or | em | foi | : | | | | | |
| | | L _{2p} Norm | ns | • • | | • | • | | | • | • | • | • | • | 133 |
| | c. | Open App | proxim | atic | on g |)ue | st | ion | s i | in | ⊗F | v | • | • | 137 |
| VI | Ωua | dratic Re | elaxat | ion | Alg | jor | it | hm | | | | • | | | 139 |
| | Α. | The Algo | orithm | ı | | | | | | | | | | | 139 |
| | в. | Computat | ional | . Cor | sid | ler | at | ion | s | | | | | | 143 |
| | c. | Example | | • • | • | • | • | | | • | • | • | • | • | 145 |
| | Bib | liography | | | | | | | | | | | | | 148 |

List of Tables

| Table | Title | Page |
|-------|--|------|
| 11.1 | The Spectral Radius $\lambda_{n,p}$ | 49 |
| 11.2 | The Upper Bound $\{\lambda_{n,p}\}^{1/2p}$ | 51 |
| II.3 | The Coefficient cp | 53 |

ii

Chapter I INTRODUCTION

For extended real numbers $1 \le p \le \infty$, let $\|\cdot\|_p$ denote the norm of some classical Banach space L_p of real (complex) functions. Let P_n be any subspace of L_p of dimension n + 1. The starting point of this thesis is the apparently new observation that $(\|\pi_n\|_{2p})^{2p}$, $\pi_n \in P_n$, $p = 1, 2, 3, \ldots$, is algebraically identical to a constrained quadratic (hermitian) form in the coefficients of π_n . Specifically, if $x \in \mathbb{R}^{n+1}$ (\mathbb{C}^{n+1}) is the vector of coefficients of π_n , then there exists a symmetric (hermitian) matrix M of dimension $N \times N$, $N = (n+1)^p$, such that we have the identity

$$(\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p})^{2p} \equiv \underbrace{(\mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}, \mathbf{M}_{\mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}})}_{p \text{ factors}}, \pi_{n} \in P_{n},$$

p factors p factors
p = 1, 2, 3, ... (1.1)

where (\cdot, \cdot) on the right hand side of (1.1) denotes the usual Euclidean inner product on \mathbb{R}^{N} (\mathbb{C}^{N}), and x $\otimes \cdots \otimes x$ $\in \mathbb{R}^{N}$ (\mathbb{C}^{N}) denotes the Kronecker product (see Chapter II, or Marcus and Minc [24, Section 1.9]) of the vector x with itself p times. The identity (1.1) represents a constrained quadratic (hermitian) form because, in general, not every vector in \mathbb{R}^{N} (\mathbb{C}^{N}) can be expressed in the form x $\otimes \cdots \otimes x$ (p factors of x). Thus, (1.1) is the quadratic (hermitian) form of M evaluated only for vectors

1 78 08 15 017

in \mathbb{R}^N (\mathbb{C}^N) of the special form $x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$. Furthermore, the matrix M can always be exhibited explicitly. The explicit form for M and the identity (1.1), together, are developed in several different directions in this thesis.

Chapter II is devoted exclusively to the study of the space P_n of complex polynomials of degree at most n, defined on the unit circle, and equipped with the norms

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{p} = \begin{cases} \left(\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{0}^{2\pi} |\pi_{n}(e^{i\theta})|^{p} d\theta\right)^{\frac{1}{p}}, & 1 \leq p < \infty \\ \\ \max_{0 \leq \theta \leq 2\pi} |\pi_{n}(e^{i\theta})|, & p = \infty \end{cases}$$
(1.2)

The integral in (1.2), like every integral in this thesis, is the Lebesgue integral. (Hence, the norms (1.2) are the norms of the Hardy H_p spaces.) In this space, the matrix M of the identity (1.1) happens to have an especially nice structure which allows us to determine explicitly all its eigenvalues and eigenvectors (see Lemma 2.3). We exploit this fact to show that the ratio

$$R_{n,2p} \equiv \max_{0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_n\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_n\|_2} \right\}, \quad p = 1, 2, 3, \dots \quad (1.3)$$

is, in effect, a constrained Rayleigh quotient which is therefore bounded above by the spectral radius of M. Thus, from Theorem 2.1, we have

$$R_{n,2p} \leq \{\lambda_{n,p}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} \leq (n+1)^{\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{2p}}$$
 (1.4)

where the integer $\lambda_{n,p}$ is the spectral radius of M and is

also precisely the largest coefficient in the power series expansion of

$$(1 + z + z^{2} + \cdots + z^{n})^{p}$$
 (1.5)

into ascending powers of z. More generally, this technique is applied to the problem

$$R_{n,2p}^{(k)} = \max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_n^{(k)}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_n\|_2} \right\}, \quad p = 1, 2, 3, \dots \quad (1.6)$$

where $\pi_n^{(k)}$, k = 0, 1, 2, ..., denotes the k-th derivative of π_n . An extension to ratios of the form (1.6) is possible because $(\|\pi_n^{(k)}\|_{2p})^{2p}$ is a constrained hermitian form of the type (1.1). As before, the matrix, denoted now by $M^{(k)}$, of this hermitian form is such that its eigenstructure can be written down explicitly. Thus, we get from Theorem 2.7

$$R_{n,2p}^{(k)} \leq k! \{\lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}, \quad k = 0, 1, ..., n$$
 (1.7)

where the integer $(k!)^{2p} \lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}$ is the spectral radius of $M^{(k)}$, and $\lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}$ is precisely the largest coefficient in the power series expansion of

$$\left\{\sum_{\substack{k=k\\k=k}}^{n} {\binom{k}{k}}^2 z^{k-k}\right\}^p, \quad k = 0, 1, \dots, n \quad (1.8)$$

into ascending powers of z.

In Chapter III, we develop some general consequences of identities of the kind (1.1). In this chapter, P_n is an n+1 dimensional subspace of $L_{2p}^{\omega}[a,b]$, the space of measurable real (complex) functions defined on the interval (a,b), $-\infty \leq a < b \leq +\infty$, and equipped with the norms

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{p}^{\omega} = \begin{cases} \left(\int_{a}^{b} |\pi_{n}(x)|^{p} \omega(x) dx\right)^{\frac{1}{p}}, \ 1 \leq p < \infty \\ \\ ess \sup_{a \leq x \leq b} |\pi_{n}(x)|, \quad p = \infty \end{cases}$$
(1.9)

where the real measurable function $\omega(x) > 0$ almost everywhere on (a,b), and satisfies

$$0 < \int_{a}^{b} \omega(\mathbf{x}) d\mathbf{x} < +\infty$$
 (1.10)

Let $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots\}$ be an orthonormal basis for $L_2^{\omega}[a,b]$ with $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots, h_n\}$ an orthonormal basis of P_n . Then it is shown that if

$$\int_{a}^{b} h_{j}(x)h_{k}(x)\overline{h_{l}(x)}\omega(x)dx \ge 0, \quad j,k,l = 0, 1, 2, \dots$$
(1.11)

then

4

$$\max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in P_{n} \\ \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega} \\ \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega} \\ \| \le \max_{0 \le k \le n} \sqrt{\|h_{k} S_{n}\|_{p}^{\omega}}, \quad p = 1, 2, 3, ...$$
(1.12)

where

$$S_n(x) = h_0(x) + h_1(x) + \dots + h_n(x)$$
 (1.13)

It might seem that (1.11) is a very restrictive condition on the basis; however, roughly half the Jacobi polynomials, all the generalized Laguerre polynomials (properly normalized), and the Hermite polynomials satisfy the condition (1.11). Furthermore, if $\phi(x)$ is defined on (c,d) in a manner analogous to the definition of $\omega(x)$ on (a,b), and

if

$$\int_{c}^{a} h_{j}(x) h_{k}(x) \overline{h_{\ell}(x)} \phi(x) dx \ge 0, \quad j,k,\ell = 0, 1, 2, \dots$$
(1.14)

then

$$\max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in P_{n} \\ \|\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega} \\ \|\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega} \\ \| s = 0 \le k \le n}} \sqrt{\|h_{k} s_{n}\|_{p}^{\phi}}, p = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$
(1.15)

where $S_n(x)$ is given by (1.13). Still further, if D is any linear operator on P_n (e.g., a derivative of some order) such that

$$\int_{c}^{d} Dh_{j}(x) Dh_{k}(x) \overline{Dh_{\ell}(x)} \phi(x) dx \ge 0, \quad j,k,\ell = 0, 1, 2, ...$$
(1.16)

then

$$\max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in P_{n} \\ \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega} \\ \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega} \\ }} \leq \max_{\substack{0 \leq k \leq n} \sqrt{\|Dh_{k} \cdot DS_{n}\|_{p}^{\phi}} \\ p = 1, 2, 3, \dots (1.17)$$

where $S_n(x)$ is given by (1.13). Theorem 3.5 establishes the bound (1.17) under a weaker hypothesis than (1.16) which we have called the Nonnegativity Condition. See (3.20). It is not hard to see that (1.16) implies that the Nonnegativity Condition holds for the functions $\{Dh_0, Dh_1, \ldots, Dh_n\}$. The effect of the Nonnegativity Condition on the appropriate quadratic (hermitian) form of the kind (1.1) is that it forces the matrix of this form to have only nonnegative entries.

Chapter IV develops some of the consequences of the general results of Chapter III for the space of real (or complex) polynomials P_n of degree at most n defined on

various real intervals. We are most successful, however, on the interval (-1,+1). For example, adopting the notation

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{p}^{(\alpha,\beta)} = \left(\int_{-1}^{1} (1-x)^{\alpha} (1+x)^{\beta} |\pi_{n}(x)|^{p} dx\right)^{\frac{1}{p}}, p \ge 1 \quad (1.18)$$

and defining

$$\mathbf{T}_{n,p}^{(\alpha,\beta)} = \max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_n \in \mathcal{P}_n}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_n\|_p^{(\alpha,\beta)}}{\|\pi_n\|_2^{(\alpha,\beta)}} \right\}, \quad p \ge 1$$
(1.19)

we show that, for $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$ and $\alpha \ge 0$,

$$T_{n,2p}^{(\alpha,\beta)} < A_0 \left[n + \frac{\alpha+\beta+3}{2} \right]^{(1+\alpha)(1-\frac{1}{p})}, p = 1, 2, 3, ...$$
(1.20)

and

$$T_{n,\infty}^{(\alpha,\beta)} < A_0 \left[n + \frac{\alpha+\beta+3}{2} \right]^{1+\alpha}$$
(1.21)

where the constant A_0 is independent of both n and p. It is clear that the choice of weight function in (1.19) affects the exponent of n in (1.20) and (1.21). Therefore, it is reasonable to expect the use of different weight functions in numerator and denominator to have an effect on the exponent of n. For example, for $\alpha \ge 0$ define

$$U_{n,p}^{(\alpha)} = \max_{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in P_{n}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_{n}^{*}\|_{p}^{(\alpha+1,\alpha+1)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\alpha)}} \right\}, \quad p \ge 1$$
(1.22)

and

$$\mathbf{v}_{n,p}^{(\alpha)} = \max_{0 \neq \pi_n \in \mathcal{P}_n} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_n^{*}\|_p^{(\alpha,\alpha)}}{\|\pi_n\|_2^{(\alpha,\alpha)}} \right\}, \qquad p \ge 1 \qquad (1.23)$$

where the prime denotes differentiation. The weight function in the numerator of (1.22) differs from the weight function in the numerator of (1.23) by a factor of $(1-x^2)$. Since 0 < $1-x^2 \le 1$ on (-1,+1), we must have

$$U_{n,p}^{(\alpha)} \leq V_{n,p}^{(\alpha)}$$
, $p \geq 1$

More to the point, however, we show that

$$U_{n,2p}^{(\alpha)} < A_1 (n+2\alpha+2)^{2+(1+\alpha)} (1-\frac{1}{p}) - \frac{1}{p}, p = 2, 3, 4, \dots (1.24)$$

$$V_{n,2p}^{(\alpha)} < A_2 (n+2\alpha+2)^{2+(1+\alpha)} (1-\frac{1}{p}), p = 2, 3, 4, \dots (1.25)$$

where the constants A_1 and A_2 are independent of both n and p. Note that as $p \neq \infty$, both (1.24) and (1.25) give the same exponent for n, which is to be expected considering the definitions (1.22) and (1.23). We emphasize that all these results are, in essence, corollaries of (1.17), that is, Theorem 3.5.

Chapter V studies the operator M defined via the identity (1.1) and leads to a new representation theorem for a special class of homogeneous polynomials. Following Hardy, Littlewood, and Polya [18, Appendix I], any homogeneous polynomial with real coefficients is called a "form." A form $F(a_0, a_1, \ldots, a_n)$ is said to be strictly positive if and only if $F(a_0, a_1, \ldots, a_n) > 0$ unless $a_0 = a_1 = \ldots$ $= a_n = 0$. It can be shown [18] that every strictly positive form F can be written

 $F = \frac{\sum_{i}^{N} M_{i}^{2}}{\sum_{j}^{N} N_{j}^{2}}$

(1.26)

where M_i and N_j are suitably chosen forms, and each sum in (1.26) has a finite number of terms. Now, for integer $p \ge 1$, define $G_p: \mathbb{R}^{n+1} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ by

$$G_{p}(a_{0},a_{1},\ldots,a_{n}) = (||a_{0} + a_{1}x + \cdots + a_{n}x^{n}||_{2p}^{\omega})^{2p}$$
 (1.27)

where $\|\cdot\|_{2p}^{\omega}$ is given by (1.9) for some fixed $\omega(x)$. Clearly, G_p is a strictly positive homogeneous polynomial of degree 2p in the variables a_0, a_1, \ldots, a_n and so has the representation (1.26). We prove that G_p also has the representation

$$G = \begin{cases} \sum_{t}^{i} (Q_{t})^{p} & \text{if } p \text{ odd} \\ \\ \sum_{r} (Q_{r})^{p} - \sum_{s} (Q_{s})^{p} & \text{if } p \text{ even} \end{cases}$$
(1.28)

where Ω_r , Ω_s , and Ω_t are suitably chosen <u>quadratic</u> forms, and each summation in (1.28) being finite. We also show that every quadratic form in (1.28) can be taken to have full rank n+1. Theorem 5.8 proves these assertions. (Its proof is easily modified to give a natural extension to complex variables a_0 , a_1 , ..., a_n .) We remark that Hilbert's 17-th problem (see [28]) concerns arbitrary, i.e., not necessarily homogeneous, polynomials F satisfying only $F(a_0, a_1, \ldots, a_n) \ge 0$ for all real a_0, a_1, \ldots, a_n .

Finally, in Chapter VI, we present an algorithm for the computation of $\pi_n^* \in P_n$ such that

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{\star}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}^{\star}\|_{2}} = \max_{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in P_{n}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \right\}, \quad p = 1, 2, 3, \dots \quad (1.29)$$

(Note that π_n^* depends on p.) The space P_n in (1.29) can be any finite dimensional space of functions defined on a measure space, provided every element in P_n has a finite L_{2p} norm. The algorithm, called the Quadratic Relaxation Algorithm (QRA), is attractive because it is as easy to apply to the general problem (1.29) as it is to apply to ratios like (1.3), or (1.12), or (1.17). Unfortunately, convergence of the QRA is at present unproved. Although the QRA is shown to have a convergent subsequence, the limit of this convergent subsequence is not proved to be a solution of (1.29). The QRA is easy to program on a computer, appears to be numerically stable, and has (so far) always converged rapidly to what appears to be the solution of (1.29).

Most of the topics discussed in this thesis appear to be little studied in the literature. The pivotal identity (1.1), after a literature search and personal correspondence with both algebraists and analysts, does seem to be original to this thesis. Its subsequent application to bounding ratios of norms and to representations of norms is, therefore, original as well. Although the particular applications can be studied by other methods, this does not appear to have been done in the literature, except possibly in special cases.

All of Chapters II, III, V, and VI seem to be original, except of course where otherwise noted. Certain special cases of topics studied in Chapter IV have been studied,

however, and we now proceed to summarize them. Since all these papers restrict themselves to algebraic polynomials, we let P_n denote the space of real polynomials of degree at most n throughout the following discussion of the literature.

Amir and Ziegler [2] study the problem

$$\max_{\substack{0\neq\pi_{n}\in P_{n}\\ \pi_{n}\in P_{n}}} \frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{\infty}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{q}}, \qquad q \ge 1$$
(1.30)

where the norms are defined as in (1.9) with $\omega(x) = 1$ on (a,b) = (0,1). They give a characterization theorem for extremal polynomials, π_n^* , of (1.30). (They also give a characterization theorem when the maximum in (1.30) is taken over various subclasses of P_n .) This characterization result is used to show that for q = 1 or q = 2, the zeros of the extremal π_n^* and the zeros of the extremal π_{n+1}^* interlace.

Gilbert and Slepian [15] study the problem

$$\lambda_{0}^{(n)} \equiv \max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in P_{n}}} \frac{\int_{\gamma}^{\delta} |\pi_{n}(\mathbf{x})|^{2} d\mathbf{x}}{\int_{\alpha}^{\beta} |\pi_{n}(\mathbf{x})|^{2} d\mathbf{x}}$$
(1.31)

with emphasis on asymptotic results for n large. They employ asymptotic methods for an equivalent differential equation eigenvalue problem to obtain results for two cases of (1.31). Specifically, they obtain for the case $(\alpha, \beta) = (-1, +1)$ and $(\gamma, \delta) = (\tilde{a}, a)$ with $1 \le \tilde{a} < a$, the asymptotic expansion

$$\lambda_{0}^{(n)} = \frac{(a + \sqrt{a^{2} - 1})^{2n+2}}{8\pi n \sqrt{a^{2} - 1}} \left[1 + O\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) \right], \quad n \to \infty$$
(1.32)

In the other case, $(\alpha, \beta) = (-1, +1)$ and $(\gamma, \delta) = (-a, a)$ with 0 < a < 1, they obtain

$$1 - \lambda_0^{(n)} = \frac{4\sqrt{\pi an}}{1 + a} \left(\frac{1 - a}{1 + a}\right)^n \left[1 + O\left(\frac{1}{n}\right)\right], \quad n \neq \infty$$
 (1.33)

In both (1.32) and (1.33), the notation $O(\frac{1}{n})$, $n \neq \infty$, is used in place of some function, say f(n), which has the property that there exists a constant B, independent of n, such that for all n we have $f(n) \leq B/n$. See [7, Section 1.2].

Turan [32] and Schmidt [35] study problems similar to (1.31), but for infinite intervals with weight functions e^{-x} and e^{-x^2} , respectively. See Chapter IV, equations (4.82) and (4.91), for details.

Handelsman and Lew [17], as well as Bleistein and Handelsman [7], study the rate at which $\|g\|_p$ converges to $\|g\|_{\infty}$ as $p \neq \infty$, where the norms are defined by (1.9) with $\omega(\mathbf{x}) = 1$ and (a,b) arbitrary. In [7, Problem 5.9], it is shown that if g has 2k+1 continuous derivatives on [a,b], and if g attains a unique maximum at the point $\gamma \in (a,b)$, and if $g^{(j)}(\gamma) = 0$, j = 1, 2, ..., 2k-1, and if $g^{(2k)}(\gamma)$ < 0, then

$$\|g\|_{p} = \|g\|_{\infty} \left[1 - \frac{\log p}{kp} + o\left(\frac{\log p}{p}\right)\right], p \neq \infty$$
(1.34)

where the notation $o(p^{-1} \log p)$, $p \neq \infty$, is used in place of

some function, say f(p), which has the property that for any $\varepsilon > 0$, there exists N such that for all $p \ge N$ we have $f(p) \le \varepsilon p^{-1} \log p$. Dividing (1.34) by $||g||_2$ and replacing g by $\pi_p \ne 0$ gives

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} = \frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{\infty}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \left[1 - \frac{\log p}{kp} + o\left(\frac{\log p}{p}\right)\right], p \to \infty$$
(1.35)

provided only that π_n attains a unique maximum interior to [a,b]. Now take [a,b] = [-1,+1], and let π_n^* be an extremal polynomial for $T_{n,\infty}^{(0,0)}$ defined in (1.19). If π_n^* attains a unique maximum at $\gamma \in (-1,+1)$ with the property that $(\pi_n^*)^{(j)}(\gamma) = 0$, j = 1, 2, ..., 2k-1, then

$$T_{n,p}^{(0,0)} > T_{n,\infty}^{(0,0)} \left[1 - \frac{\log p}{kp} + o\left(\frac{\log p}{p}\right) \right], p \neq \infty$$
 (1.36)

Jackson [36] contains many interesting inequalities, only two of which seem related to this thesis. Jackson proves that if

$$\left\{\int_{a}^{b} (b-x)^{-\frac{1}{2}} |\pi_{n}(x)|^{p} dx\right\}^{\frac{1}{p}} = 1, \quad p > 0 \quad (1.37)$$

then

$$|\pi_{n}(\mathbf{x})| \leq \frac{Cn^{p}}{(\mathbf{x}-\mathbf{a})^{N/2}}, \quad \mathbf{a} < \mathbf{x} \leq \mathbf{b}$$
 (1.38)

where C is a constant independent of n and x, and N is the

smallest integer greater than or equal to 1/p. (A similar result is derived by replacing x, a, b by -x, -b, -a.) Another inequality gives an upper bound in n for the ratio of the sup norm to the weighted L_2 norm of π_n . Let $\omega(x)$ be a nonnegative integrable function on (a,b) such that

$$\int_{a}^{b} \frac{(b-x)^{-(r+1)/2}}{[\omega(x)]^{r}} dx < \infty$$
(1.39)

for some r > 0. Then Jackson [36, Theorem 12] proves that

$$\frac{\left\|\pi_{n}\left(\mathbf{x}\right)\right\|}{\left\|\pi_{n}\right\|_{2}^{\omega}} \leq O\left(n^{\frac{1}{2}+\frac{1}{2r}}\right), \quad n \neq \infty$$

$$(1.40)$$

throughout any interval $a+\delta \le x \le b$, $\delta > 0$.

Černyh [9] studies the problem

$$\max_{\substack{0\neq\pi_{n}\in P_{n}}}\left\{\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{(k)}\|_{p}^{\chi_{1}}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\chi_{2}}}\right\}, \quad 1 \leq p \leq \infty$$
(1.41)

where $\pi_n^{(k)}$ denotes the k-th derivative of π_n , k = 0, 1, ...,and χ_1 and χ_2 are characteristic functions of the intervals (α, β) and (-1, +1), respectively, and (α, β) is not a subset of (-1, +1). Černyh proves [9, Corollary 3 of Theorem 1] that if $\alpha \neq -\beta$, then, for $1 \leq p \leq \infty$,

$$\max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in P_{n} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_{n}^{(k)}\|_{p}^{\chi_{1}}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\chi_{2}} \right\}}} = n^{k-\frac{1}{p}} g^{n}(n) \left[\frac{H^{(k)}_{p,2} + o(1)}{p,2} \right], \quad (1.42)$$

where $n = \max \{ |\alpha|, \beta \}, g(n) = n + \sqrt{n^2 - 1}, \text{ and }$

$$H_{p,2}^{(k)} = \frac{g^{\frac{3}{2}}(n)}{2\sqrt{\pi} p^{1/p} \sqrt{g^{2}(n) - 1}} (n^{2} - 1)^{\frac{1}{2p} - \frac{2k+1}{4}}$$
(1.43)

Černyh's results are not directly comparable to any derived in this thesis.

Certain analogous problems for the trigonometric polynomials have also been studied. See, for example, Jackson [36], Bari [37], and Videnskii [38].

For future reference, we record the following bound which, although apparently new, is easily derived. For even integer p, the bound (1.45) will be shown to be identically the 2p-th root of the trace of a matrix E of an identity analogous to (1.1). (See Lemma 3.9, Theorem 3.4, and Corollary 3.11.)

<u>Theorem 1.1</u> Let $p \ge 1$ be a real number. Let $-\infty \le a < b \le +\infty$ and $-\infty \le c < d \le +\infty$. Let P_n be a subspace of $L_2^{\omega}[a,b] \cap L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ with a basis $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots, h_n\}$ which is orthonormal with respect to the inner product

$$(f,g)_{\omega} = \int_{a}^{b} f(x) \overline{g(x)} \omega(x) dx$$
 (1.44)

where the real measurable functions $\omega(x) > 0$ and $\phi(x) \ge 0$ almost everywhere on (a,b) and (c,d), respectively, and

$$0 < \int_{a}^{b} \omega(x) dx < +\infty$$
$$0 < \int_{a}^{d} \phi(x) dx < +\infty$$

Let $D: P_n \neq L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ be a linear transformation. Then,

$$\max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in P_{n}}} \left\{ \frac{\|D\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} \right\} \leq \left\{ \int_{c}^{d} \left[K_{n}^{(D)}(x) \right]^{p} \phi(x) dx \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
(1.45)

where

$$K_{n}^{(D)}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} |Dh_{k}(x)|^{2}$$
(1.46)

<u>Proof</u> Without loss of generality, we restrict our attention to those π_n such that $\|\pi_n\|_2^{\omega} = 1$. Let

$$\pi_{n}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} a_{k}h_{k}(x)$$

Then, by the orthonormality of $\{h_k\}$,

$$\sum_{k=0}^{n} |a_k|^2 = 1$$

Thus, by the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality,

$$|D\pi_{n}(\mathbf{x})|^{2} \leq \sum_{k=0}^{n} |a_{k}|^{2} \sum_{k=0}^{n} |Dh_{k}(\mathbf{x})|^{2}$$
$$= K_{n}^{(D)}(\mathbf{x})$$
(1.47)

Raising both sides to the p-th power, multiplying by ϕ , and integrating completes the proof.

Finally, we remark that every maximum taken of ratios similar to (1.6), or (1.19), or (1.45), is attained. Since $S = \{\pi_n \in P_n : \|\pi_n\|_2^{\omega} = 1\}$ is a closed and bounded subset of the finite dimensional normed linear space P_n , S is compact. Since f : $P_n \rightarrow R$ defined by $f(\pi_n) = \|D\pi_n\|_{2p}^{\phi}$ is continuous on S, f attains its maximum on S.

Chapter II

COMPLEX POLYNOMIALS DEFINED ON THE UNIT CIRCLE

A. Preliminaries

In this chapter attention is confined to P_n , the collection of all polynomials with complex coefficients of degree at most n, equipped with the norms

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{q} = \left\{\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{0}^{2\pi} |\pi_{n}(e^{i\theta})|^{q} d\theta\right\}^{\frac{1}{q}}, \quad q \ge 1 \quad (2.1)$$

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{\infty} = \max_{0 \le \theta \le 2\pi} |\pi_{n}(e^{i\theta})|$$
(2.2)

where $\pi_n \in P_n$. The norms (2.1) and (2.2) are the norms of Hardy H_p spaces. If $q = 2p \ge 2$, then (2.1) can be written, by setting $z = e^{i\theta}$ and letting C be the unit circle, as

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p} = \left\{\frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{C} \left[\pi_{n}(z) \overline{\pi_{n}(z)}\right]^{p} \frac{dz}{z}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}, \quad p \ge 1 \quad (2.3)$$

An inner product is defined for all f and g in P_n by

$$(f,g) = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_C f(z) \overline{g(z)} \frac{dz}{z}$$
(2.4)

Theorem 1.1 is easily extended to complex polynomials defined on the unit circle. Such an extension gives

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq \sqrt{\|K_{n}\|_{p}} , \quad p \geq 1$$
 (2.5)

where

$$K_{n}(z) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} |h_{k}(z)|^{2}$$

and $\{h_0(z), h_1(z), \ldots, h_n(z)\}$ form an orthonormal basis for P_n with respect to the inner product (2.4). Since $\{1, z, z^2, \ldots, z^n\}$ form an orthonormal basis here, $K_n(z) \equiv n + 1$ and (2.5) gives

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq \sqrt{n+1}, \quad p \geq 1$$
(2.6)

Note that (2.6) is valid for all real $p \ge 1$.

The bound (2.6) can be improved upon considerably in the case of even integer norms. Throughout the rest of this chapter we restrict attention to the norms (2.2) and (2.3) with p = 1, 2, 3, ... Before getting to the general result (Theorem 2.1), we first examine the special case n = 2 and p = 2. Let $\pi_2(z) = a + bz + cz^2$. From (2.3) we have

$$\left(\|\pi_2\|_4 \right)^4 = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_C \left[\pi_n(z) \overline{\pi_n(z)} \right]^2 \frac{dz}{z}$$

$$= \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_C \left[\left[a + bz + cz^2 \right] \left[\bar{a} + \frac{\bar{b}}{z} + \frac{\bar{c}}{z^2} \right] \right]^2 \frac{dz}{z}$$

$$= \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_C \frac{1}{z^5} \left[a\bar{c} + (a\bar{b} + b\bar{c})z + (|a|^2 + |b|^2 + |c|^2)z^2 + (|ab + b\bar{c})z^2 + (|ab + b\bar{c})z^3 + \bar{a}cz^4 \right]^2 dz$$

since $\overline{z} = 1/z$ for $z \in C$. By the residue theorem of elementary complex analysis, the value of the last given integral is clearly the coefficient of z^4 after the square in the integrand has been taken, so that

$$\|\pi_{2}\|_{4}^{4} = (|a|^{2} + |b|^{2} + |c|^{2})^{2}$$

+ 2($\bar{a}b + \bar{b}c$)($a\bar{b} + b\bar{c}$) + 2| ac |²
= $|a|^{4} + |b|^{4} + |c|^{4} + 4|ab|^{2} + 4|bc|^{2} + 4|ac|^{2}$
+ 2($\bar{a}\bar{c}b^{2} + ac\bar{b}^{2}$) (2.7)

The last expression can be written as the hermitian form of a certain matrix evaluated at a certain vector. Explicitly,

$$\| \pi_{2} \|_{4}^{4} = \begin{bmatrix} \overline{aa} \\ \overline{ab} \\ \overline{ac} \\ \overline{ba} \\ \overline{ba} \\ \overline{bb} \\ \overline{bc} \\ \overline{cc} \end{bmatrix}^{T} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} aa \\ ab \\ ac \\ ba \\ bb \\ bc \\ ca \\ cb \\ cc \end{bmatrix}$$

with the vector u and matrix M having the obvious definitions.

What is the eigenstructure of M? A tedious computation would show that

$$det(M - \lambda I) = -\lambda^{4} (\lambda - I)^{2} (\lambda - 2)^{2} (\lambda - 3) \qquad (2.9)$$

However, this computation can be avoided because all the eigenvalues and a complete set of eigenvectors can be found for M by means of a very simple observation: the

19

(2.8)

rows of M are orthogonal eigenvectors of M and have corresponding eigenvalues equal to the row sums. We now verify that the eigenvalues must be 0, 1, 2, and 3 with multiplicities given by (2.9), where 0 is included because M clearly does not have full row rank. The eigenvalue $\lambda = 3$ has at least one eigenvector, namely,

 $v_0 = \langle 0 \ 0 \ 1 \ 0 \ 1 \ 0 \ 1 \ 0 \ 0 \rangle^{T}$ (2.10.1)

The eigenvalue $\lambda = 2$ has at least two eigenvectors,

| v ₁ : | = | <0 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0> ^T | (2.10.2) |
|------------------|---|----|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|-----------------|----------|
| v ₂ = | = | <0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0> ^T | (2.10.3) |

and the eigenvalue $\lambda = 1$ has at least two also

| v ₃ | = | <1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0> ^T | (2.10.4) |
|----------------|---|-----|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|-----------------|----------|
| v, | = | < 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1> ^T | (2.10.5) |

Finally, the eigenvalue $\lambda = 0$ has four easily found linearly independent eigenvectors,

| v_5 | = | < 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | -2 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0>1 | (2.10.6) |
|-------|---|-----|---|---|---|----|---|----|---|-----------------|----------|
| v. | = | < 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | -2 | 0 | 0> ^T | (2.10.7) |

and

 $v_7 = \langle 0 \ 1 \ 0 \ -1 \ 0 \ 0 \ 0 \ 0 \ 0 \ 0 \ 0 \ T$ (2.10.8) $v_8 = \langle 0 \ 0 \ 0 \ 0 \ 0 \ 1 \ 0 \ -1 \ 0 \ >^T$ (2.10.9)

Since nine linearly independent eigenvectors have been found, we have them all.

How does knowledge of the eigenstructure of M help to improve the bound (2.6)? Since

$$\|\pi_{2}\|_{2}^{4} = (|a|^{2} + |b|^{2} + |c|^{2})^{2}$$

$$= |a|^{4} + |b|^{4} + |c|^{4} + 2|ab|^{2} + 2|ac|^{2} + 2|bc|^{2}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} \overline{aa} \\ \overline{ab} \\ \overline{ac} \\ \overline{ba} \\ \overline{ba} \\ \overline{bb} \\ \overline{bc} \\ \overline{cc} \end{bmatrix}^{T} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\ \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} aa \\ ab \\ ac \\ ba \\ bb \\ bc \\ ca \\ cb \\ cc \end{bmatrix}$$

 $= \overline{u}^{T} u$,

(2.11)

we can write from (2.8) and (2.11),

$$\frac{\|\pi_{2}\|_{4}}{\|\pi_{2}\|_{2}} = \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{4}^{4}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{4}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{4}}$$

$$= \left\{ \frac{\overline{u}^{T}Mu}{\overline{u}^{T}u} \right\}^{\frac{1}{4}}$$

$$\leq \max_{v \neq 0} \left\{ \frac{\overline{v}^{T}Mv}{\overline{v}^{T}v} \right\}^{\frac{1}{4}}$$

$$(2.12)$$

$$= \left\{ \lambda_{\max} \right\}^{\frac{1}{4}} = 3^{\frac{1}{4}}$$

$$(2.13)$$

where v is an arbitrary nonzero vector in C^9 and λ_{max} is the largest eigenvalue of M. The key equality (2.13) follows from the well-known fact (see, e.g., Gantmacher [13]) that the ratio of hermitian forms in (2.12) is bounded above by the largest eigenvalue of M and that this bound is attained if and only if v is an eigenvector of M corresponding to the largest eigenvalue. Hence $(\overline{v}^{T}Mv/\overline{v}^{T}v) = \lambda_{max}$ if and only if $v = cv_{0}$, where v_{0} is given in (2.10.1) and $c \neq 0$ is an arbitrary constant. However,

 $v_0 \neq \langle aa ab ac ba bb bc ca cb cc \rangle^T$

for any choice of a, b, and c, so that inequality (2.12) is a strict inequality. Therefore,

$$\frac{\|\pi_2\|_4}{\|\pi_2\|_2} < 3^{\frac{1}{4}}$$
(2.14)

This estimate is considerably better than (2.6), which gives $3^{1/2}$.

It will be shown that the hermitian forms (2.8) and (2.11) can be generalized, that the eigenstructure of these hermitian forms can be written down explicitly, and that the inequality (2.14) can be extended to even integer norms of polynomials in π_n . Before doing this, however, some definitions are in order. These definitions are simply notational devices. At this point, nothing deeper than notational formalism is intended because only the notation is required for the proofs in this chapter.

Let $p \ge 1$ and $n \ge 0$ be integers. Let the p indices $\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p$ each run independently over the common index set $\{0, 1, \ldots, n\}$. Define

 $\Gamma = \Gamma_{n,p} = \{\alpha \mid \alpha = (\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_p)\}$ (2.15) so that Γ has $(n+1)^p$ elements and each element is a p-tuple of nonnegative integers. We will always assume that Γ is lexicographically ordered; that is, if $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_p)$ $\in \Gamma$ and $\beta = (\beta_1, \dots, \beta_p) \in \Gamma$, then $\alpha < \beta$ if and only if there exists an integer t, $1 \le t \le p$, such that

 $\alpha_1 = \beta_1, \dots, \alpha_{t-1} = \beta_{t-1}, \alpha_t < \beta_t$ (2.16) It is easy to see that (2.16) defines a linear ordering on Γ with (0, 0, ..., 0) and (n, n, ..., n) as the first and last elements, respectively. (Lexicographic ordering is not novel. See, e.g., Marcus and Minc [24, p 10].)

Let $x = \langle x_0 | x_1 | \cdots | x_n \rangle^T \in \mathbb{C}^{n+1}$. Now, for each $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$, we can compute the product

$$\mathbf{x}_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots \mathbf{x}_{\alpha_{p}} \in \mathbb{C}$$
(2.17)

and this number is uniquely defined for each $\alpha \in \Gamma$. The collection of all $(n + 1)^p$ products of the form (2.17), linearly ordered by the linear ordering in Γ , defines the Kronecker product (see, e.g., Marcus and Minc [24, Section 1.9]) $x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$ of the vector x with itself p times. Explicitly, the Kronecker product $x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$ (p factors of x) is defined by

$$\underbrace{\mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}}_{p \text{ factors}} = \langle \mathbf{x}_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots \mathbf{x}_{\alpha_{p}} \rangle \in \mathbb{C}^{(n+1)^{P}}$$
(2.18)

where $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$. For example, if $\mathbf{x} = \langle \mathbf{x}_0 | \mathbf{x}_1 | \mathbf{x}_2 \rangle^T \in \mathbb{C}^3$, then

$$x \otimes x = \begin{bmatrix} x_0 x_0 \\ x_0 x_1 \\ x_0 x_2 \\ x_1 x_0 \\ x_1 x_1 \\ x_1 x_2 \\ x_2 x_0 \\ x_2 x_1 \\ x_2 x_2 \end{bmatrix} \in \mathbf{C}^9$$
(2.19)

For $\alpha \in \Gamma$, we may speak of the α -th component of the Kronecker product $x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$ (p factors of x). For example, the (1,2) component of (2.19) is x_1x_2 while the (0,1) component is x_0x_1 . Also, if

$$\mathbf{u} = \langle \mathbf{u}_1 \ \mathbf{u}_2 \ \cdots \ \mathbf{u}_9 \rangle^{\mathrm{T}} \in \mathbf{c}^9,$$

we can regard, for example, u_6 as the (1,2) component of u and u_2 as the (0,1) component of u using the lexicographical ordering on Γ . Thus, any vector u of dimension $(n + 1)^p$ can be written in the general form

$$\mathbf{u} = \langle \mathbf{u}_{\alpha} \rangle, \ \alpha \in \Gamma \tag{2.20}$$

Similarly, any complex matrix M of dimension $(n + 1)^p \times (n + 1)^p$ can be expressed in the general form

$$M = [m_{\alpha,\beta}], \qquad \alpha,\beta \in \Gamma \qquad (2.21)$$

where $m_{\alpha,\beta}$ is the entry in the row corresponding to $\alpha \in \Gamma$ and the column corresponding to $\beta \in \Gamma$, and where the rows and columns of M are ordered lexicographically. For n = 1and p = 2, the general form is

$$M = \begin{bmatrix} m(00), (00) & m(00), (01) & m(00), (10) & m(00), (11) \\ m(01), (00) & m(01), (01) & m(01), (10) & m(01), (11) \\ m(10), (00) & m(10), (01) & m(10), (10) & m(10), (11) \\ m(11), (00) & m(11), (01) & m(11), (10) & m(11), (11) \end{bmatrix}$$
(2.22)

Finally, the Kronecker product of an $r \times s$ matrix A with the $p \times q$ matrix B is denoted by A \otimes B and is defined (in partitioned form) to be the sp \times rg matrix

$$\mathbf{A} \otimes \mathbf{B} \begin{bmatrix} a_{11}^{B} & a_{12}^{B} & \cdots & a_{1r}^{B} \\ a_{21}^{B} & a_{22}^{B} & \cdots & a_{2r}^{B} \\ \vdots & \vdots & & \vdots \\ a_{s1}^{B} & a_{s2}^{B} & \cdots & a_{sr}^{B} \end{bmatrix}$$

(See, e.g., [24, Section 1.9].) Proceeding inductively by defining A \otimes B \otimes C = A \otimes (B \otimes C), one can define the Kronecker product of any number of matrices each of arbitrary dimension. Note that the earlier definition (2.18) of the Kronecker product x $\otimes \cdots \otimes x$ (p factors of x) is merely a special case and, in fact, is now extended in a meaningful manner to Kronecker products of the form x \otimes y $\otimes \cdots \otimes z$, where x, y, \cdots , z all lie in C^{n+1} . Many elementary algebraic properties of Kronecker products are known, but will not be given here. See [24], for example.

B. The Underlying Matrix and Its Eigenstructure

With this notation, we now generalize the hermitian form (2.8).

Lemma 2.1 Let $\pi_n(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + \cdots + a_n z^n \in P_n$, and let $x = \langle a_0 \ a_1 \ \cdots \ a_n \rangle^T \in \mathbb{C}^{n+1}$. Then for positive integer p,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p} = \left\{\bar{u}^{T}M_{n,p}u\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
(2.23)

where $u = x \otimes \cdots \otimes x \in C^{(n+1)^p}$, the matrix $M_{n,p} = [m_{\alpha,\beta}]$ of dimension $(n + 1)^p \times (n + 1)^p$ is given by

 $m_{\alpha,\beta} = \delta_{\alpha_1} + \dots + \alpha_p, \beta_1 + \dots + \beta_p$ (2.24)

where
$$\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$$
, $\beta = (\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p) \in \Gamma$, and
 $\delta_{\alpha_1} + \cdots + \alpha_p, \beta_1 + \cdots + \beta_p = \begin{cases} 1, \text{ if } \alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p = \beta_1 + \cdots + \beta_p \\ 0, \text{ if otherwise} \end{cases}$
(2.25)

Proof Since

$$[\pi_{n}(z)]^{p} = \sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} a_{\alpha} \cdots a_{\alpha} z^{\alpha_{1} + \cdots + \alpha_{p}}$$
(2.26)

we have from (2.3) and the fact that $\overline{z} = \frac{1}{z}$ on C,

$$\begin{aligned} \|\pi_{\mathbf{n}}\|_{2\mathbf{p}}^{2\mathbf{p}} &= \frac{1}{2\pi\mathbf{i}} \int_{\mathbf{C}} [\pi_{\mathbf{n}}(z)\overline{\pi_{\mathbf{n}}(z)}]^{\mathbf{p}} \frac{dz}{z} = \frac{1}{2\pi\mathbf{i}} \int_{\mathbf{C}} \pi_{\mathbf{n}}^{\mathbf{p}}(z)\overline{\pi_{\mathbf{n}}^{\mathbf{p}}(z)} \frac{dz}{z} \\ &= \frac{1}{2\pi\mathbf{i}} \int_{\mathbf{C}} \left[\int_{\beta \in \Gamma} a_{\beta_{1}} \cdots a_{\beta_{p}} z^{\beta_{1}} \cdots z^{\beta_{1}} \right] \\ &\cdot \left[\overline{\sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} a_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots a_{\alpha_{p}} z^{\alpha_{1}} \cdots z^{\alpha_{1}} \right] \frac{dz}{z} \\ &= \sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} \sum_{\beta \in \Gamma} \overline{a_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}} a_{\beta_{1}} \cdots a_{\beta_{p}} \\ &\cdot \left\{ \frac{1}{2\pi\mathbf{i}} \int_{\mathbf{C}} z^{(\beta_{1} + \cdots + \beta_{p}) - (\alpha_{1} + \cdots + \alpha_{p})} \frac{dz}{z} \right\} \\ &= \sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} \sum_{\beta \in \Gamma} \overline{a_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}} a_{\beta_{1}} \cdots a_{\beta_{p}} \\ &\cdot \left\{ \frac{1}{2\pi\mathbf{i}} \int_{\mathbf{C}} z^{(\beta_{1} + \cdots + \beta_{p}) - (\alpha_{1} + \cdots + \alpha_{p})} \frac{dz}{z} \right\} \\ &= \sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} \sum_{\beta \in \Gamma} \overline{a_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}} a_{\beta_{1}} \cdots a_{\beta_{p}} \\ &\cdot \delta_{\alpha_{1}} + \cdots + \alpha_{p}, \beta_{1} + \cdots + \beta_{p} \\ &= \overline{u}^{\mathrm{T}} M_{\mathbf{n}, \mathbf{p}} u \end{aligned}$$

This concludes the proof.

The matrix $M_{n,p}$ reduces to the identity matrix for p = 1. Note, too, that the matrix in (2.8) is just $M_{2,2}$.

Since $M_{n,p}$ is a real symmetric matrix, its eigenvalues must be real. Also, $M_{n,p}$ is both nonnegative and positive semidefinite. The positive semidefiniteness of $M_{n,p}$ will follow from Lemma 2.3 in which it is established that all the eigenvalues are nonnegative. (An easier and much more general proof of positive semidefiniteness is given in Chapter III and applies to $M_{n,p}$ also.)

Lemma 2.2 Let $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$. Then the integer

$$N(\alpha) = \sum_{j_{1}, \dots, j_{p}=0}^{n} 1$$
 (2.27)

where the sum is taken subject to the constraint

 $j_1 + \cdots + j_p = \alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p$

is the coefficient of $z^{\alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p}$ in the expansion of

 $(1 + z + z^{2} + \cdots + z^{n})^{p}$ (2.28)

into ascending powers of z. Conversely, every coefficient in the expansion of (2.28) has the form (2.27) for some $\alpha \in \Gamma$.

<u>Proof</u> Let $x = \langle 1 \ z \ z^2 \ \cdots \ z^n \rangle^T \in \mathbb{C}^{n+1}$. Then from (2.18), we have for $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ \ldots, \ \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$,

$$\underbrace{\mathbf{x} \otimes \ldots \otimes \mathbf{x}}_{p \text{ factors}} = \langle \mathbf{z}^{\alpha_1} \cdots \mathbf{z}^{\alpha_p} \rangle_{\alpha \in \Gamma}$$
$$= \langle \mathbf{z}^{\alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p} \rangle_{\alpha \in \Gamma} \in \mathbf{c}^{(n+1)^F}$$

For each $\alpha \in \Gamma$, how many different components of $x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$

are identically equal to the α -th component? Clearly the answer is N(α). Therefore, summing the components of x $\otimes \cdots \otimes$ x and collecting terms gives a power series in z with coefficients of the form N(α) for some $\alpha \in \Gamma$. Since every integer N(α) must occur as a coefficient, and since

 $\sum_{\alpha_1,\ldots,\alpha_p=0}^{n} z^{\alpha_1+\cdots+\alpha_p} \equiv (1+z+\cdots+z^n)^p \quad (2.29)$

the proof is complete.

Lemma 2.3 Let $M_{n,p}$ be the matrix (2.24). Then

- 1. The null space of $M_{n,p}$ has dimension $(n + 1)^p$ - (np + 1).
- ii. The nonzero eigenvalues of $M_{n,p}$ appear with the correct multiplicity as the coefficients in the expansion of $(1 + z + z^2 + \cdots + z^n)^p$ into ascending powers of z, and every such coefficient is an eigenvalue of $M_{n,p}$.
- iii. The largest eigenvalue of M_{n,p} has multiplicity l if np is even and multiplicity 2 if np is odd. All other nonzero eigenvalues have multiplicity 2.
 - iv. Every column of $M_{n,p}$ is an eigenvector corresponding to a nonzero eigenvalue of $M_{n,p}$.
 - Any two columns of M_{n,p} are either orthogonal or identical.
 - vi. The orthogonal columns of $M_{n,p}$ form a basis for the range of $M_{n,p}$.

vii. The eigenspace of the largest eigenvalue of $M_{n,p}$ does not contain a vector of the form $x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$, $x \neq 0, x \in C^{n+1}$, unless n = 0 or p = 1.

<u>Proof</u> Throughout this proof, let $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$, $\beta = (\beta_1, \dots, \beta_p) \in \Gamma$, and $\gamma = (\gamma_1, \dots, \gamma_p) \in \Gamma$. Also, denote the α -th column of $M_{n,p}$ by

$$R_{\alpha} = \langle m_{\gamma,\alpha} \rangle_{\gamma \in \Gamma}$$

Now, to prove (v), note that the inner product between the α -th and β -th column is

$$\begin{split} \bar{\mathbf{R}}_{\beta}^{T} \mathbf{R}_{\alpha} &= \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma} \mathbf{m}_{\gamma, \beta} \mathbf{m}_{\gamma, \alpha} \\ &= \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma} \delta_{\gamma_{1}} + \dots + \gamma_{p}, \beta_{1} + \dots + \beta_{p} \delta_{\gamma_{1}} + \dots + \gamma_{p}, \alpha_{1} + \dots + \alpha_{p} \\ &= \begin{cases} \mathbf{N}(\alpha), \text{ if } \alpha_{1} + \dots + \alpha_{p} &= \beta_{1} + \dots + \beta_{p} \\ 0, \text{ if otherwise} \end{cases} \end{split}$$

$$(2.30)$$

so that $R_{\alpha} \perp R_{\beta}$ or $\alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p = \beta_1 + \cdots + \beta_p$. In the latter case, the definition of $M_{n,p}$ implies that $R_{\alpha} = R_{\beta}$. This proves (v).

To prove (iv), we show that

$$M_{n,p}R_{\alpha} = N(\alpha)R_{\alpha}$$
(2.31)

for each $\alpha \in \Gamma$. Fix α . Then the matrix equation (2.31) is equivalent to the system of linear equations

$$R_{\beta}^{T}R_{\alpha} = N(\alpha)m_{\beta,\alpha}$$
, for all $\beta \in \Gamma$ (2.32)

since $M_{n,p}$ is real symmetric and the β -th row is the transpose of the column R_{β} . If $m_{\beta,\alpha} = 1$, then $R_{\alpha} = R_{\beta}$ and (2.32)
follows from (2.30). On the other hand, if $m_{\beta,\alpha} = 0$, then $R_{\alpha} \neq R_{\beta}$ and (2.32) follows again from (2.30). In either case, the proof of (iv) is complete. Actually, (2.31) together with Lemma 2.2 also proves that every coefficient in the expansion (2.28) is a nonzero eigenvalue of M_{n,p}. This statement is half of (ii). To prove the other half of (ii), recall that $M_{n,p}$ is symmetric and the column rank of M_{n,p} equals the number of nonzero eigenvalues, counted with correct multiplicity (see [24]). From (v) and $R_{q} = R_{g}$ iff $\alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p = \beta_1 + \cdots + \beta_p$, the column rank is np + 1 (the number of distinct sums of the form α_1 + \cdots + α_p) and (2.31) has np + 1 solutions. Therefore, every nonzero eigenvalue of $M_{n,p}$ is of the form $N(\alpha)$. From Lemma 2.2, N(α) is the coefficient of $z^{\alpha_1} + \cdots + {\alpha_p}$ in the expansion of (2.28). Since the mapping $R_{\alpha} \rightarrow z^{\alpha_1} + \cdots + \alpha_p$ takes distinct columns of M_{n,p} into distinct powers of z, N(a) occurs with correct multiplicity in the expansion of (2.28). This proves (ii). From (ii) follow (i) and (vi), since $M_{n,D}$ is symmetric and the range is orthogonal to the null space (see [24]). Also, (iii) follows directly from (ii) by examination of the coefficients in the expansion (2.28). For n = 0 or p = 1, the assertion of (vii) is clear. For n > 0 and p > 1, the proof proceeds by showing that if $x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$ (p factors) is in the eigenspace of the largest eigenvalue, then $x = 0 \in \mathbb{C}^{n+1}$. This will establish (vii). By (ii), the largest eigenvalue is the largest coefficient in the expansion of (2.28). First, let np be even. Then the largest coefficient occurs only

once and is the coefficient of z^k , where k = np/2. Thus, the eigenspace consists of constant multiples of the column

$$\mathbf{R}_{\alpha} = \langle \delta_{\gamma_1} + \cdots + \gamma_p, k \rangle_{\gamma \in \Gamma}$$

where α is fixed and $\alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p = k$. Suppose that for some $\mathbf{x} = \langle \mathbf{x}_0 \ \mathbf{x}_1 \ \cdots \ \mathbf{x}_n \rangle^T \in \mathbb{C}^{n+1}$ and constant $c \neq 0$,

$$cR_{a} = x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$$

Now the y-th components must be equal, so

 $c\delta_{\gamma_1} + \cdots + \gamma_p, k = x_{\gamma_1} \cdots x_{\gamma_p}$

For $\gamma_1 = \cdots = \gamma_p = t$, $t = 0, 1, \ldots, n$, we have

$$c\delta_{pt,k} = (x_t)^p$$

or

$$x_{t} = \begin{cases} (c)^{\overline{p}}, & \text{if } t = n/2 \\ 0, & \text{if } t \neq n/2 \end{cases}$$

since k/p = n/2. If n is odd, then $x_t = 0$ for all t, and we are done. If n is even, then x has precisely one nonzero component, so that $x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$ has only one nonzero component and cR_{α} must have only one nonzero component. But the last statement is false for p > 1 and n > 0. Therefore, c = 0 and $x = 0 \in C^{n+1}$, and we are done if np is even. On the other hand, if np is odd the largest eigenvalue of $M_{n,p}$ occurs as the coefficient of both z^k and z^{k+1} , where k = (np - 1)/2. Let α and β be fixed so that $\alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p = k$ and $\beta_1 + \cdots + \beta_p = k + 1$. Then the general element of the eigenspace of the largest eigenvalue can be written, for arbitrary constants c_1 and c_2 ,

$$c_{1}R_{\alpha} + c_{2}R_{\beta} = \langle c_{1}\delta_{\gamma_{1}} + \cdots + \gamma_{p}, k + c_{2}\delta_{\gamma_{1}} + \cdots + \gamma_{p}, k+1 \rangle_{\gamma \in \Gamma}$$

Suppose $x = \langle x_0 \ x_1 \ \cdots \ x_n \rangle^T \in \mathbb{C}^{n+1}$ is such that

 $c_1 R_{\alpha} + c_2 R_{\beta} = x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$

for some choice of constants $c_1 \neq 0$ and $c_2 \neq 0$. Then the γ -th coordinates are equal, so

$$c_1 \delta_{\gamma_1} + \dots + \gamma_p, k + c_2 \delta_{\gamma_1} + \dots + \gamma_p, k+1 = x_{\gamma_1} \cdots x_{\gamma_p}$$

For $\gamma_1 = \cdots = \gamma_p = t$, $t = 0, 1, \ldots, n$, we have

$$c_{1}\delta_{pt,k} + c_{2}\delta_{pt,k+1} = (x_{t})^{p}$$

and so

$$x_{t} = \begin{cases} (c_{1})^{\frac{1}{p}} & \text{if } pt = k \\ (c_{2})^{\frac{1}{p}} & \text{if } pt = k + 1 \\ 0 & \text{if } otherwise \end{cases}$$

Now x can have only one nonzero component since p cannot divide both k and k + 1. Hence, $x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$ has only one nonzero component, and so $c_1 R_{\alpha} + c_2 R_{\beta}$ has only one nonzero component. This can't happen for n > 0 and p > 1, so it must be that $c_1 = c_2 = 0$. Then $x = 0 \in \mathbb{C}^{n+1}$. This proves (vii) and concludes the proof of Lemma 2.3.

Corollary 2.4 Mn,p is positive semidefinite.

<u>Proof</u> By a standard result (see [24, Section 4.12]), a symmetric matrix is positive semidefinite iff all its eigenvalues are nonnegative. Lemma 2.3 shows that all the eigenvalues of $M_{n,p}$ are nonnegative.

$$\frac{\text{Lemma 2.5}}{\|\boldsymbol{\pi}_{n}\|_{2}} = \left\{ \bar{u}^{T} I u \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} = \left\{ \bar{u}^{T} u \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

where $u = x \otimes \cdots \otimes x \in c^{(n+1)^p}$ and I is the identity matrix of dimension $(n+1)^p \times (n+1)^p$.

Proof Certainly
$$\|\pi_n\|_2^2 = |a_0|^2 + |a_1|^2 + \dots + |a_n|^2$$

 $= \sum_{k=0}^n a_k \bar{a}_k$

so that

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{2p} = \left(\sum_{k=0}^{n} a_{k} \bar{a}_{k}\right)^{p}$$

$$= \sum_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}=0}^{n} (a_{\alpha_{1}} \bar{a}_{\alpha_{1}}) \cdots (a_{\alpha_{p}} \bar{a}_{\alpha_{p}})$$

$$= \sum_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}=0}^{n} (a_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}) (\overline{a_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}})$$

$$= \bar{u}^{T} I u$$

since

$$u = x \otimes \cdots \otimes x = \langle a_{\alpha_1} \cdots a_{\alpha_p} \rangle_{\alpha \in \Gamma}$$

where $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$. This concludes the proof.

C. Bound for Ratio of L_{2p} Norm to L₂ Norm

For extended real numbers $p \ge 1$, define

$$R_{n,p} = \max_{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \right\}$$
(2.33)

It is easy to see that the maximum in (2.33) can be taken over the closed and bounded set $S = \{\pi_n \in P_n : \|\pi_n\|_2 = 1\}$ without changing $R_{n,p}$. Since $\|\cdot\|_p$ is a continuous function on the compact set S, $\|\cdot\|_p$ attains its maximum. Thus the maximum in (2.33) is attained. Any polynomial for which $R_{n,p}$ is attained is called an extremal polynomial of $R_{n,p}$. Any nonzero constant multiple of an extremal polynomial of $R_{n,p}$ gives another extremal polynomial of $R_{n,p}$. Thus, extremal polynomials are not unique. Normalizing extremal polynomials by the requirement that they have unit L_2 norm does not necessarily give uniqueness. For example, every polynomial is an extremal polynomial of $R_{n,2}$.

Note that $R_{n,p} \leq R_{n,q}$ whenever $1 \leq p \leq q$. By Hölder's inequality, for $r \geq 1$, $s \geq 1$, and $\frac{1}{r} + \frac{1}{s} = 1$, we have

$$\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{0}^{2\pi} |\pi_{n}(e^{i\theta})|^{p} |d\theta \leq \left\{ \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{0}^{2\pi} |\pi_{n}(e^{i\theta})|^{pr} |d\theta \right\}^{\frac{1}{r}} \cdot \left\{ \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{0}^{2\pi} |s| |d\theta \right\}^{\frac{1}{s}}$$

so that

 $\|\pi_n\|_p \leq \|\pi_n\|_{pr}, \quad r \geq 1$

and this establishes our claim. The last inequality also

shows that $\|\pi_n\|_2 \leq \|\pi_n\|_p$ whenever $p \geq 2$, so that

$$r_{n,p} \equiv \min_{\substack{\pi_n \neq 0}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_n\|_p}{\|\pi_n\|_2} \right\} = 1, \qquad p \geq 2$$

since $\pi_{n}(z) \equiv 1$ gives $\|\pi_{n}\|_{p} / \|\pi_{n}\|_{2} = 1$.

In this section, we obtain estimates for $R_{n,2p}$ in terms of the spectral radius of $M_{n,p}$ defined in Lemma 2.1.

<u>Notation</u>: For $n \ge 0$ and $p \ge 1$, define the integer $\lambda_{n,p}$ to be the largest coefficient in the power series expansion of $(1 + z + z^2 + \cdots + z^n)^p$ into ascending powers of z. Thus, $\lambda_{n,p}$ is the coefficient z^N , $N = [\frac{np}{2}]$, in this expansion.

The multinomial coefficients $\lambda_{n,p}$ will be seen to play an important role in this chapter. For example, Lemma 2.3 shows that $\lambda_{n,p}$ is identically the spectral radius of $M_{n,p}$. Another example is provided by the next lemma.

Lemma 2.6 $||1 + z + z^2 + \cdots + z^n||_{2p} = \{\lambda_{n,2p}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}},$ p = 1, 2, 3, ...

$$\frac{\text{Proof}}{\left(\|1+z+\cdots+z^{n}\|_{2p}\right)^{2p}} = \left\{\frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{C} (1+z+\cdots+z^{n})^{p} \cdot (1+\overline{z}+\cdots+\overline{z}^{n})^{p} \frac{dz}{z}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} \\ = \left\{\frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{C} (1+z+\cdots+z^{n})^{2p} \frac{dz}{z^{np+1}}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} \\ = \left\{\lambda_{n,2p}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

We note that, for fixed integer $n \ge 0$, the sequence

$$\{\lambda_{n,2p}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}, \quad p = 1, 2, 3, \ldots$$

is monotone increasing. This follows from Lemma 2.6, and the fact that

 $\|1 + z + z^{2} + \cdots + z^{n}\|_{2p} \leq \|1 + z + z^{2} + \cdots + z^{n}\|_{2p+2}$

The next theorem generalizes the bound (2.14) of the earlier example. It is the main theorem of this chapter.

Theorem 2.1 For n = 0, 1, 2, 3, ... and for p = 1, 2, ...,

$$\frac{\{\lambda_{n,2p}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}}{\sqrt{n+1}} \leq R_{n,2p} \leq \{\lambda_{n,p}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} \leq (n+1)^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}}$$
(2.34)

The second inequality in (2.34) is strict if and only if $n \ge 1$ and $p \ge 2$, while the third inequality in (2.34) is strict if and only if $n \ge 1$ and $p \ge 3$. Furthermore,

 $R_{n,\infty} = \sqrt{n+1}$ (2.35)

and an extremal polynomial of $R_{n,\infty}$ is just

 $1 + z + z^2 + \cdots + z^n$

Proof From Lemma 2.6, we have

$$R_{n,2p} \geq \frac{\|1 + z + z^{2} + \dots + z^{n}\|_{2p}}{\|1 + z + z^{2} + \dots + z^{n}\|_{2}} = \frac{\{\lambda_{n,2p}\}^{\overline{2p}}}{\sqrt{n+1}}$$

which proves the first inequality in (2.34). Let $\pi_n(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + \cdots + a_n z^n$, and let $x = \langle a_0 \ a_1 \ \cdots \ a_n \rangle^T \in \mathbf{C}^{n+1}$. From Lemma 2.1 and Lemma 2.5,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} = \left\{\frac{\overline{u}^{T}M_{n,p}u}{\overline{u}^{T}u}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} \leq \max_{\substack{v \neq 0}} \left\{\frac{\overline{v}^{T}M_{n,p}v}{\overline{v}^{T}v}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

$$= \left\{\lambda_{n,p}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
(2.36)

where v is an arbitrary nonzero vector in $c^{(n+1)^p}$ and $u = x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$ (p factors). Therefore,

$$R_{n,2p} = \max_{\substack{\pi_n \neq 0}} \frac{\|\pi_n\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_n\|_2} \le \{\lambda_{n,p}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
(2.37)

which is the second inequality of (2.34). Finally, from the identity

$$(1 + z + \cdots + z^{n})^{p} = (1 + z + \cdots + z^{n})$$

 $\cdot (1 + z + \cdots + z^{n})^{p-1}$

follows immediately the inequality

$$\lambda_{n,p} \leq (n+1)\lambda_{n,p-1}, p \geq 1$$
 (2.38)

Since $\lambda_{n,1} = 1$, (2.38) implies

 $\lambda_{n,p} \leq (n+1)^{p-1}, p \geq 1$

which proves the third inequality in (2.34). Next, note that inequality (2.36) is an equality if and only if u is in the eigenspace of the largest eigenvalue, namely $\lambda_{n,p}$, of the matrix $M_{n,p}$. From Lemma 2.3 (vii), there exists an element of the form $x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$, $x \neq 0$, in the eigenspace of $\lambda_{n,p}$ if and only if n = 0 or p = 1. Thus, Lemma 2.1 implies inequality (2.36) is strict if and only if $n \ge 1$ and $p \ge 2$. Thus, the second inequality in (2.34) is

strict if and only if $n \ge 1$ and $p \ge 2$. Also, the third inequality of (2.34) is an equality if and only if (2.38) is an equality, which is the case if and only if n = 0 or p = 1 or 2. Hence, we have left to prove only (2.35). From the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{\infty} = \|\pi_{n}(z_{0})\|, \quad \text{some } z_{0} \in C,$$
$$= \|a_{0} + a_{1}z_{0} + \dots + a_{n}z_{0}^{n}\|$$
$$\leq \left\{ \sum_{k=0}^{n} \|a_{k}\|^{2} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \left\{ \sum_{k=0}^{n} \|z_{0}^{k}\|^{2} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$
$$= \|\pi_{n}\|_{2} \sqrt{n+1}$$

Equality is possible with, for example, $\pi_n(z) = 1 + z + \cdots + z^n$, so that (2.35) follows. This concludes the proof.

Corollary 2.7 For
$$n = 0, 1, 2, ...,$$

$$\lim_{p \to \infty} \{\lambda_{n,p}\}^{\frac{1}{p}} = n + 1$$
(2.39)

<u>Proof</u> Let $\pi_n^{\star}(z) = 1 + z + \cdots + z^n$ in Theorem 2.1. Then, using Lemma 2.6,

$$\frac{\{\lambda_{n,2p}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}}{\sqrt{n+1}} = \frac{\|\pi_{n}^{*}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}^{*}\|_{2}} \le \{\lambda_{n,p}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} \le \sqrt{n+1}$$

so that taking the limit as $p \rightarrow \infty$ finishes the proof since

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{\star}\|_{\infty}}{\|\pi_{n}^{\star}\|_{2}} = \frac{n+1}{\sqrt{n+1}} = \sqrt{n+1}$$

Note that Corollary 2.7 shows that for fixed n, both the upper and the lower bounds of $R_{n,2p}$ in (2.34) go to $\sqrt{n+1}$ as p goes to infinity.

At this point, it is appropriate to point out that the author communicated the result

$$R_{n,2p} \leq \{\lambda_{n,p}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
 (2.40)

(without proof) privately to D. J. Newman who discovered the following short proof of this result: Write

$$\pi_{n}(z) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} a_{k} z^{k} \neq 0$$
 (2.41)

$$(1 + z + \cdots + z^{n})^{p} = \sum_{\substack{j=0 \\ j \neq 0}}^{np} \lambda_{j} z^{j}$$

so that

$$\lambda_{n,p} = \max_{\substack{0 \le j \le np}} \lambda_{j}$$

Now, since the powers of z are orthonormal on the unit circle C, with $z = e^{i\theta}$,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{2p} = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{C} |\pi_{n}(z)|^{2p} d\theta$$
$$= \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{C} |[\pi_{n}(z)]^{p}|^{2} d\theta$$
$$= \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{C} |\prod_{j=0}^{np} (\prod_{\alpha_{1}+\cdots+\alpha_{p}=j}^{n} a_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots a_{\alpha_{p}})z^{j}|^{2} d\theta$$

$$= \sum_{j=0}^{np} \left| \sum_{\alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p = j}^{\alpha_1 \alpha_1} a_{\alpha_2} \cdots a_{\alpha_p} \right|^2 \qquad (2.42)$$

Schwarz's Inequality gives

$$\left| \begin{array}{c} \sum \\ \alpha_{1} + \cdots + \alpha_{p} = j \end{array} \right|^{a_{\alpha_{1}}} \cdots \left| \begin{array}{c} a_{\alpha_{p}} \end{array} \right|^{2} \leq \left(\sum \\ \alpha_{1} + \cdots + \alpha_{p} = j \end{array} \right|^{2} \\ \cdot \left(\sum \\ \alpha_{1} + \cdots + \alpha_{p} = j \end{array} \right|^{a_{\alpha_{1}}} \cdots \left| \begin{array}{c} a_{\alpha_{p}} \end{array} \right|^{2} \\ = \lambda_{j} \sum \\ \alpha_{1} + \cdots + \alpha_{p} = j \end{array} \right|^{a_{\alpha_{1}}} \cdots \left| \begin{array}{c} a_{\alpha_{p}} \end{array} \right|^{2} \qquad (2.43)$$

so that

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{2p} \leq \sum_{j=0}^{np} \left\{ \lambda_{j} \sum_{\alpha_{1}+\cdots+\alpha_{p}=j} \left| a_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots a_{\alpha_{p}} \right|^{2} \right\}$$

$$\leq \lambda_{n,p} \left\{ \sum_{j=0}^{np} \sum_{\alpha_{1}+\cdots+\alpha_{p}=j} \left| a_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots a_{\alpha_{p}} \right|^{2} \right\}$$

$$= \lambda_{n,p} \left\{ \sum_{j=0}^{n} \left| a_{j} \right|^{2} \right\}^{p}$$

$$= \lambda_{n,p} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{2p} \qquad (2.44)$$

The inequality (2.44) immediately implies (2.40).

Newman's proof gains in brevity over the algebraic approach of Theorem 2.1. It depends heavily on the fact that the powers of z are orthonormal. In spaces where the powers of z are not orthonormal, it is not clear how to modify Newman's proof in order to get useful results. (The difficulty is caused by the fact that the product of two orthonormal polynomials is not, generally, orthonormal

to either of the polynomials in the product.) The algebraic approach of Theorem 2.1 is, however, generalized without too much additional difficulty to situations in which the powers of z are not orthonormal. See Chapter III.

It is interesting to note that the constants λ_j of the Schwarz Inequality (2.43) each turn out to be eigenvalues of the matrix $M_{n,p}$ of Lemma 2.1.

D. The Spectral Radius $\lambda_{n,p}$

The integers $\lambda_{n,p}$ have a geometrical significance in \mathbb{R}^p . (This result is apparently new.) Consider first the case (p = 2) of a square lattice with n + 1 points on a side. What is the largest number of points that can lie on any line perpendicular to a major diagonal of the square? We easily see the answer is $n + 1 (= \lambda_{n,2})$. Next, consider the case (p = 3) of a cubic lattice with n + 1 points on a side. What is the largest number of points that can lie on any plane perpendicular to a major diagonal of the cube? In this case the answer is not so clear, but we will show that the answer is just $\lambda_{n,3}$. More generally, and more carefully, the set [can be considered as a finite "hypercube" lattice in R^P with n + 1 points on a side. Let T be the hyperplane in \mathbb{R}^p consisting of all vectors in \mathbb{R}^p orthogonal (with the usual inner product) to the vector $\alpha_0 = (1, 1, ..., 1) \in \mathbb{R}^p$. Thus, dim T = p - 1. Let $\mathbf{T}_{\alpha} \equiv \alpha + \mathbf{T}, \ \alpha \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$. Then, we show that

 $\max_{\alpha \in \mathbb{R}^{p}} o(\mathbf{T}_{\alpha} \cap \Gamma) = \lambda_{n,p}$ (2.45)

where the small "o" notation in (2.45) denotes the number of elements in the set. Let $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \mathbb{R}^p$ with $\alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p = s$. With $\beta = (\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p) \in \mathbb{R}^p$, we have $\beta \in T_{\alpha}$ if and only if $(\beta - \alpha) \perp \alpha_0$ if and only if $\beta_1 + \cdots$ $+ \beta_p = \alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p = s$. Therefore, $T_{\alpha} \cap \Gamma \neq \emptyset$ if and only if $s \in \{0, 1, 2, \ldots, np\}$. Hence, by Lemma 2.2,

$$o(\mathbf{T}_{\alpha} \cap \Gamma) = \begin{cases} N(\tilde{\alpha}), \text{ if there exists } \tilde{\alpha} \in \mathbf{T}_{\alpha} \cap \Gamma \\ 0, \text{ if not} \end{cases}$$

An inspection of the sum (2.27) shows that $N(\tilde{\alpha}) = N(\tilde{\beta})$ if $\tilde{\alpha}$ and $\tilde{\beta}$ both lie in $T_{\alpha} \cap \Gamma$, so that $o(T_{\alpha} \cap \Gamma)$ is unambiguously defined. This proves (2.45) by definition of $\lambda_{n,p}$.

In certain cases, the integers $\lambda_{n,p}$ possess a generating function. Polya-Szegö [29, Part III, Chapter 5, Problems 217-218] derive the expansions

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{1-2\omega-3\omega^2}} = \sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \lambda_2, p^{\omega^p}$$
$$= 1 + \omega + 3\omega^2 + 7\omega^3 + 19\omega^4 + \cdots$$
$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{1-4\omega}} = \sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \lambda_1, 2p^{\omega^p}$$
$$= 1 + 2\omega + 6\omega^2 + 20\omega^3 + 70\omega^4 + \cdots$$
$$\frac{1}{2\omega} \left[\frac{1}{\sqrt{1-4\omega}} - 1 \right] = \sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \lambda_1, 2p + 1\omega^p$$
$$= 1 + 3\omega + 10\omega^2 + 35\omega^3 + 126\omega^4 + \cdots$$

Unfortunately, the methods used to derive these expansions are not easily extended to the general case.

The integers $\lambda_{n,p}$ are also related to a certain problem in probability. See, for example, Feller [11, Chapter 11, Problem 11].

Finally, the integers $\lambda_{n,p}$ have a combinatorial significance that is explored by MacMahon [22, Section IV]. (This reference was pointed out by George Andrews in a private communication.) A composition of an integer I is a partition of I in which the order of occurrence of the parts is important. For example, there are three partitions of I = 3, namely,

3 = 33 = 2 + 13 = 1 + 1 + 1

while there are four compositions, namely,

$$3 = 3$$

 $3 = 2 + 1$
 $3 = 1 + 2$
 $3 = 1 + 1 + 2$

MacMahon shows that the number of compositions of I into exactly $s \ge 1$ parts, with each part restricted not to exceed $t \ge 1$ in magnitude, is precisely the coefficient of z^{I} in the expansion of

$$z^{S}\left(\frac{1-z^{t}}{1-z}\right)^{S} \equiv z^{S}\left(1+z+\cdots z^{t-1}\right)^{S}$$

Hence, the integer $\lambda_{n,p}$ is the number of compositions of

$$I = \left[\frac{(n+2)p}{2}\right] = \left[\frac{np}{2}\right] + p$$

into exactly p parts, each part being restricted not to

exceed n + 1 in magnitude. For n = 1 and p = 2, we have I = 3 and $\lambda_{1,2}$ = 2 which is precisely the number of compositions of 3 into n + 1 = 2 parts with each part not exceeding 2 in magnitude.

The combinatorial interpretation gives a bound for $\lambda_{n,p}$. Define the denumerant D(n) of the integer n to be the number of p-tuples (x_1, \ldots, x_p) of solutions of the equation

$$x_1 + x_2 + \dots + x_n = n$$
 (2.46)

where x_1, \dots, x_p are required to be nonnegative integers. By a theorem of Bell [6, 30], D(n) is a polynomial in n of degree p - 1. Specifically, Bell [6] states that

$$D(n) = \frac{1}{(p-1)!} \prod_{r=1}^{p-1} (n+r)$$
(2.47)

Since $\lambda_{n,p}$ is the coefficient of z^N , N = [np/2], in the expansion of $(1 + z + z^2 + \cdots + z^n)^p$ into ascending powers of z, and since we require $0 \le x_k \le n$ in (2.46) to compute $\lambda_{n,p}$ [see (2.27)], we have

$$\lambda_{n,p} \leq D(N) \leq D\left(\frac{np}{2}\right)$$
(2.48)

It is not hard to show that

$$D\left(\frac{np}{2}\right) \leq \frac{p^{p-1}(n+1)^{p-1}}{2^{p-1}(p-1)!}$$
(2.49)

Considering (2.49), (2.48), and (2.34), gives

$$R_{n,2p} \leq \left(\frac{p^{p-1}}{2^{p-1}(p-1)!}\right)^{\frac{1}{2p}}(n+1)^{\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{2p}}$$
(2.50)

Unfortunately, (2.50) does not improve (2.34) since

$$\frac{p^{p-1}}{2^{p-1}(p-1)!} \ge 1, \qquad p = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$
 (2.51)

as can be seen by showing that the left hand side of (2.51) is strictly increasing in p.

It is possible to give explicit expressions for $\lambda_{n,p}$. Define, for integer $p \ge 1$ and for all real x, the polynomial

$$a_{p}(x) = \begin{cases} \frac{(x + 1)(x + 2)\cdots(x + p - 1)}{(p - 1)!}, & p \ge 2\\ 1, & p = 1 \end{cases}$$
 (2.52)

The polynomial $a_p(x)$ has degree p - 1 in x which, on the nonnegative integers, is just

$$a_{p}(k) = {p + k - 1 \choose k}, \quad k = 0, 1, 2, ...$$
 (2.53)

(For a connection between Stirling numbers of the first kind and the polynomials $a_p(x)$, see [29, Part I, Chapter 4, Problem 199].) The next theorem shows that, for fixed p, $a_{n,p}$ is "almost" a polynomial of degree p - 1 in n.

Theorem 2.2 For integer $p \ge 1$,

$$\lambda_{n,2p} = \sum_{j=0}^{p-1} (-1)^{j} {\binom{2p}{j}} a_{2p} ((p-j)n - j), \qquad (2.54)$$

n = 0, 1, 2, 3, ...

$$\lambda_{n,2p-1} = \begin{cases} \sum_{j=0}^{p-1} (-1)^{j} {\binom{2p-1}{j}} a_{2p-1} ((p-j-\frac{1}{2})n-j), n=0,2,4,\dots \\ (2.55) \\ \sum_{j=0}^{p-1} (-1)^{j} {\binom{2p-1}{j}} a_{2p-1} ((p-j-\frac{1}{2})n-j-\frac{1}{2}), n=1,3,5,\dots \end{cases}$$

<u>Proof</u> For p = 1, the theorem is easily verified. Let $p \ge 2$. From the binomial theorem and the binomial series (see, e.g., [1, Equation (3.6.8)])

$$(1 + z + z^{2} + \dots + z^{n})^{p}$$

$$= \left\{ \frac{1 - z^{n+1}}{1 - z} \right\}^{p}$$

$$= (1 - z^{n+1})^{p} (1 - z)^{-p}$$

$$= \left(\sum_{j=0}^{p} (-1)^{j} {p \choose j} z^{j} (n+1) \right) \left(\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{p}(k) z^{k} \right) \qquad (2.56)$$

where $a_p(k)$ is defined by (2.52). Let N = [np/2]. Since $\lambda_{n,p}$ is the coefficient of z^N , (2.56) implies

$$\lambda_{n,p} = \sum_{\substack{j (n+1)+k=N \\ j \ge 0, k \ge 0}} (-1)^{j} {\binom{p}{j}} a_{p}(k)$$
$$= \frac{\left[\frac{N}{n+1}\right]}{\sum_{j=0}^{\sum} (-1)^{j} {\binom{p}{j}} a_{p}(N - j(n+1))}$$

It is easy to see that

$$\left[\frac{N}{n+1}\right] \leq \left[\frac{p-1}{2}\right], \quad n \geq 0 \tag{2.57}$$

If (2.57) is a strict inequality for some n = n', then for each integer j such that

$$\left[\frac{N}{n'+1}\right] < j \leq \left[\frac{p-1}{2}\right]$$

we have

$$-(p - 1) \leq -\left[\frac{p - 1}{2}\right] \leq N - j(n' + 1) < 0$$

so that by (2.52)

$$a_n(N - j(n' + 1)) = 0$$

Therefore, whether or not (2.57) is a strict inequality,

$$\lambda_{n,p} = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{p-1}{2} \rfloor} (-1)^{j} {p \choose j} a_{p} (N - j(n + 1)), n = 0, 1, 2, ...$$
(2.58)

Specializing (2.58) proves the various cases of the Theorem.

Table II.l lists a few of the multinomial coefficients $\lambda_{n,p}$. Table II.2 gives values for the bound (2.34). The entries in Table II.2 have been rounded, so to construct a bound in (2.34) from this table the last digit might need to be increased by 1. Both tables were constructed by means of a simple synthetic multiplication scheme. A scaling trick and double precision arithmetic were both required to compute

 $^{\lambda}$ 100,256 \approx 1.09169 \times 10⁵¹⁰

on the UNIVAC 1108 in just under 39 minutes. Utilization of the symmetry of the expansion coefficients of (2.28) would have reduced the computation time by nearly half. Alternatively, Theorem 2.2 could have been used directly. This approach requires more care because of the cancellation inherent in (2.54) and (2.55).

Corollary 2.8 The following equations hold:

- i. For all $n \ge 0$, $\lambda_{n,1} = 1$.
- ii. For all $n \ge 0$, $\lambda_{n,2} = n + 1$. iii. For n = 1, 3, 5, ..., $\lambda_{n,3} = \frac{3}{4}(n^2 + 2n + 1)$, and for n = 0, 2, 4, ..., $\lambda_{n,3} = \frac{3}{4}(n^2 + 2n + \frac{4}{3})$.

iv. For all $n \ge 0$, $\lambda_{n,4} = \frac{2}{3} \left[n^3 + 3n^2 + \frac{7}{2}n + \frac{3}{2} \right]$ v. For $n = 1, 3, 5, \ldots$, $\lambda_{n,5} = \frac{115}{192} \left[n^4 + 4n^3 + \frac{142}{23} n^2 + \frac{100}{23} n + \frac{27}{23} \right]$ and for n = 0, 2, 4, ... $\lambda_{n,5} = \frac{115}{192} \left[n^4 + 4n^3 + \frac{148}{23} n^2 + \frac{112}{23} n + \frac{192}{115} \right]$ vi. For all $n \ge 0$, $\lambda_{n,6} = \frac{11}{20} \left(n^5 + 5n^4 + \frac{115}{11} n^3 + \frac{125}{11} n^2 \right)$ $+\frac{74}{11}n+\frac{20}{11}$ vii. For all $n \ge 0$, $\lambda_{n,8} = \frac{151}{315} \left(n^7 + 7n^6 + \frac{3241}{151} n^5 + \frac{5635}{151} n^4 \right)$ $+\frac{6034}{151}n^3+\frac{4018}{151}n^2+\frac{1599}{151}n+\frac{315}{151}$ viii. For all $n \ge 0$, $\lambda_{n,10} = \frac{15619}{36288} \left[n^9 + 9n^8 + \frac{569634}{15619} n^7 \right]$ + $\frac{1363446}{15619}$ n⁶ + $\frac{2127531}{15619}$ n⁵ + $\frac{2251179}{15619}$ n⁴ $+\frac{1625216}{15619}n^3+\frac{780804}{15619}n^2+\frac{234288}{15619}n$ $+\frac{36288}{15619}$ The coefficient of n^6 in $\lambda_{n,7}$ is $\frac{5887}{11520}$, for ix. all $n \ge 0$. The coefficient of n^8 in $\lambda_{n,9}$ is $\frac{259723}{573440}$, for x. all $n \ge 0$.

TABLE II.1. The Spectral Radius $\lambda_{n,p}$

| 10 | 252 | 8953 | 1 16304 | 8 56945 | 43 95456 | 175 38157 | 581 99208 | 1677 29959 | 4324 57640 | 10188 72811 | 22281 54512 | 45771 27763 | 89143 09964 | 1 65814 20835 | 2 96326 04816 | 5 11256 45317 | 8 55016 36868 | 13 90719 24069 | 22 06336 15280 | 34 22376 34221 | 52 01360 84072 |
|-----|-----|------|---------|---------|----------|-----------|-----------|------------|------------|-------------|-------------|-------------|-------------|---------------|---------------|---------------|---------------|----------------|----------------|----------------|----------------|
| 6 | 126 | 3139 | 30276 | 1 80325 | 7 67394 | 26 36263 | 76 35987 | 196 10233 | 454 33800 | 974 64799 | 1951 70310 | 3704 87485 | 6694 80588 | 11632 05475 | 19476 52092 | 31645 88407 | 49959 76968 | 77021 89345 | 1 16038 17450 | 1 71489 49027 | 2 48704 46964 |
| 8 | 70 | 1107 | 8092 | 38165 | 1 35954 | 3 98567 | 10 12664 | 23 06025 | 48 16030 | 93 77467 | 172 32084 | 301 62301 | 506 51498 | 820 73295 | 1289 12240 | 1970 18321 | 2938 97718 | 4290 42211 | 6142 99660 | 8642 87973 | 11968 54978 |
| 7 | 35 | 393 | 2128 | 8135 | 24017 | 60691 | 1 34512 | 2 73127 | 5 12365 | 9 08755 | 15 28688 | 24 73325 | 38 52919 | 58 32765 | 85 82336 | 123 54469 | 173 95119 | 240 72133 | 327 26960 | 438 74139 | 579 71221 |
| 9 | 20 | 141 | 580 | 1751 | 4332 | 9331 | 18152 | 32661 | 55252 | 88913 | 1 37292 | 2 04763 | 2 96492 | 4 18503 | 5 77744 | 7 82153 | 10 40724 | 13 63573 | 17 62004 | 22 48575 | 28 37164 |
| 5 | 10 | 51 | 155 | 381 | 780 | 1451 | 2460 | 3951 | 6000 | 8801 | 12435 | 17151 | 23030 | 30381 | 39280 | 20101 | 62910 | 78151 | 95875 | 1 16601 | 1 40360 |
| 4 | 9 | 19 | 44 | 85 | 146 | 231 | 344 | 489 | 670 | 168 | 1156 | 1469 | 1834 | 2255 | 2736 | 3281 | 3894 | 4579 | 5340 | 6181 | 7106 |
| e | ß | 2 | 12 | 19 | 27 | 37 | 48 | 61 | 75 | 16 | 108 | 127 | 147 | 169 | 192 | 217 | 243 | 271 | 300 | 331 | 363 |
| n 2 | 1 2 | 2 3 | 3 4 | 4 5 | 5 6 | 6 7 | 7 8 | 8 | 9 10 | 10 11 | 11 12 | 12 13 | 13 14 | 14 15 | 15 16 | 16 17 | 17 18 | 18 19 | 19 20 | 20 21 | 21 22 |

1-----

| (continued) | |
|-------------|------|
|) | n, p |
| ~ | |
| Radius | |
| Spectral | |
| The | |
| 11.1. | |
| LABLE | |

| 2 | | 4 | 2 | 9 | 7 | σ | 6 | 10 |
|---------------|----------|---|------------|-------------|----------------------------|---|----------------------------|----------------------------|
| 3 397 8119 | 91 8119 | | 1 67751 | 35 43035 | 757 15487 | 16335 86615 | 3 55000 63501 | 77 59386 66273 |
| 4 432 9224 | 32 9224 | | 1 98780 | 43 82904 | 977 02640 | 22003 65864 | 4 98824 04555 | 113 80110 20024 |
| 5 469 10425 | 59 10425 | | 2 34131 | 53 75005 | 1248 53275 | 29279 84825 | 6 91619 90275 | 164 31511 28475 |
| 6 507 11726 | 11726 | | 2 73780 | 65 39156 | 1579 24585 | 38528 12366 | 9 46257 75270 | 233 85833 73776 |
| 1 1951 88451 | 51 88451 | | 40 52751 | 1897 97061 | 89937 13821 | <pre><4.3026 × 10¹¹</pre> | <2.0733 × 10 ¹³ | ≈1.0048 × 10 ¹⁵ |
| 1 7651 686901 | 106989 1 | | .623 30501 | 57808 12871 | ≈5.4249 × 10 ¹¹ | ≈5.1397 × 10 ¹³ | ≈4.9047 × 10 ¹⁵ | ≈4.7076 × 10 ¹⁷ |

|) ^{2p} |
|-------------------|
| {λ _{n,p} |
| Bound |
| Upper |
| The |
| .2. |
| 11 |
| TABLE |

-1

| 6 | 1.30824 | 1.56411 | 1.77399 | 1.95886 | 2.12298 | 2.27364 | 2.41202 | 2.54178 | 2.66324 | 2.77859 | 2.88788 | 2.99256 | 3.09257 | 3.18895 | 3.28159 | 4.07172 | 5.49306 | 7.44219 | |
|--------|---------|---------|---------|-----------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|--------------------|
| 8 | 1.30412 | 1.94974 | 1.75491 | 1.93354 | 2.09333 | 2.23888 | 2.37324 | 2.49850 | 2.61618 | 2.72744 | 2.83316 | 2.93404 | 3.03066 | 3.12347 | 3.21287 | 3.97293 | 5.33468 | 7.19339 | |
| 7 | 1.28911 | 1.53219 | 1.72867 | . 1.90244 | 2.05539 | 2.19610 | 2.32456 | 2.44519 | 2.55757 | 2.66442 | 2.76527 | 2.86196 | 2.95402 | 3.04282 | 3.12793 | 3.85127 | 5.14039 | 6.88923 | |
| 9 | 1.28357 | 1.51043 | 1.69936 | 1.86326 | 2.00936 | 2.14204 | 2.26418 | 2.37777 | 2.48425 | 2.58472 | 2.68001 | 2.77079 | 2.85760 | 2.94086 | 3.02096 | 3.69794 | 4.89618 | 6.50877 | |
| 2 | 1.25893 | 1.48169 | 1.65590 | 1.81173 | 1.94630 | 2.07094 | 2.18320 | 2.28913 | 2.38680 | 2.48001 | 2.56723 | 2.65112 | 2.73042 | 2.80712 | 2.88016 | 3.49736 | 4.57905 | 6.01825 | |
| 4 | 1.25103 | 1.44492 | 1.60484 | 1.74252 | 1.86442 | 1.97447 | 2.07525 | 2.16852 | 2.25559 | 2.33741 | 2.41474 | 2.48816 | 2.55814 | 2.62509 | 2.68930 | 3.22585 | 4.15277 | 5.36552 | |
| .е | 1.20094 | 1.38309 | 1.51309 | 1.63352 | 1.73205 | 1.82544 | 1.90637 | 1.98406 | 2.05357 | 2.12084 | 2.18225 | 2.24199 | 2.29731 | 2.35134 | 2.40187 | 2.82381 | 3.53489 | 4.43901 | |
| 2 | 1.18921 | 1.31607 | 1.41421 | 1.49535 | 1.56509 | 1.62658 | 1.68179 | 1.73205 | 1.77828 | 1.82116 | 1.86121 | 1.89883 | 1.93434 | 1.96799 | 2.00000 | 2.25810 | 2.67235 | 3.17015 | = 4 (<u>n+1</u>) |
| д ц | I | 2 | 3 | 4 | 2 | 9 | 7 | 80 | 6 | 10 | 11 | 12 | 13 | 14 | 15 | 25 | 50 | 100 | =) |

| - |
|-----------|
| ontinued) |
| ŭ |
| - |
| 2. |
| H |
| - |
| |
| ABLE |
| F |

| (= \n+1) | | | | | | | | |
|----------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|---------|--------|
| 10.04988 | 9.91216 | 9.78955 | 9.56173 | 9.14635 | 8.41345 | 7.82531 | 7.64963 | 100 |
| 7.14143 | 7.05297 | 6.97504 | 6.83093 | 6.56916 | 6.10765 | 5.73611 | 5.62477 | 50 |
| 5.09902 | 5.04250 | 4.99335 | 4.90308 | 4.74010 | 4.45376 | 4.22304 | 4.15382 | 25 |
| 4.00000 | 3.95942 | 3.92456 | 3.86095 | 3.74682 | 3.54736 | 3.38688 | 3.33879 | 15 |
| 3.87298 | 3.83418 | 3.80090 | 3.74024 | 3.63152 | 3.44167 | 3.28908 | 3.24326 | 14 |
| 3.74166 | 3.70467 | 3.67301 | 3.61537 | 3.51218 | 3.33218 | 3.18748 | 3.14416 | 13 |
| 3.60555 | 3.57043 | 3.54043 | 3.48589 | 3.38837 | 3.21846 | 3.08204 | 3.04109 | 12 |
| 3.46410 | 3.43090 | 3.40261 | 3.35124 | 3.25954 | 3.09999 | 2.97187 | 2.93358 | 11 |
| 3.31663 | 3.28540 | 3.25887 | 3.21077 | 3.12505 | 2.97615 | 2.85682 | 2.82102 | 10 |
| 3.16228 | 3.13309 | 3.10838 | 3.06365 | 2.98410 | 2.84619 | 2.73564 | 2.70270 | 6 |
| 3.00000 | 2.97293 | 2.95009 | 2.90885 | 2.83568 | 2.70913 | 2.60800 | 2.57769 | 8 |
| 2.82843 | 2.80356 | 2.78267 | 2.74505 | 2.67850 | 2.56374 | 2.47200 | 2.44481 | 1 |
| 2.64575 | 2.62319 | 2.60433 | 2.57049 | 2.51083 | 2.40837 | 2.32688 | 2.30250 | 9 |
| 2.44949 | 2.42935 | 2.41263 | 2.38275 | 2.33032 | 2.24073 | 2.16941 | 2.14857 | 2 |
| 2.23607 | 2.21850 | 2.20404 | 2.17835 | 2.13356 | 2.05758 | 1.99775 | 1.97992 | 4 |
| 2.00000 | 1.98520 | 1.97317 | 1.95195 | 1.91532 | 1.85389 | 1.80527 | 1.79176 | m |
| 1.73205 | 1.72029 | 1.71091 | 1.69459 | 1.66687 | 1.62131 | 1.58641 | 1.57615 | 5 |
| 1.41421 | 1.40595 | 1.39963 | 1.38893 | 1.37142 | 1.34408 | 1.32166 | 1.31847 | I |
| 8 | 256 | 128 | 64 | 32 | 16 | 11 | 10 | ц ц |

ч.

<u>Proof</u> Use finite differences in Table II.1, in light of Theorem 2.2.

For integer $p \ge 1$, let c_p be the coefficient of n^{p-1} in the polynomial expression for $\lambda_{n,p}$. (The next theorem will show that c_p is well defined.) The preceding corollary gives the following table.

| | | | | and the second se |
|----|---------------|---------------------------|--------------------------------|---|
| р | cp | c _p rounded | $(c_p)^{\frac{1}{2p}}$ rounded | $\left(\frac{1}{c_p}\right)^{\frac{1}{p-1}}$ rounded |
| 1 | 1 | 1.00000 | 1.00000 | 1.00000 |
| 2 | 1 | 1.00000 | 1.00000 | 1.00000 |
| 3 | 3/4 | .75000 | .95318 | 1.15470 |
| 4 | 2/3 | .66667 | .95058 | 1.14471 |
| 5 | 115/192 | .59896 | .95004 | 1.13671 |
| 6 | 11/20 | .55000 | .95140 | 1.12701 |
| 7 | 5887/11520 | .51102 | .95318 | 1.11839 |
| 8 | 151/315 | .47937 | .95508 | 1.11076 |
| 9 | 259723/573440 | .45292 | .95695 | 1.10407 |
| 10 | 15619/36288 | .43042 | .95873 | 1.09819 |
| | | | | |

TABLE II.3. The Coefficient cp

The extra columns are included for later reference. Also, since (2.49) holds for all n no matter how large, we see that

$$c_{p} \leq \frac{p^{p-1}}{2^{p-1}(p-1)!} < \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi p}} \left(\frac{e}{2}\right)^{p}$$
 (2.59)

where the second inequality follows from Stirling's inequality [see equation (4.21)]. An explicit form for c_p is given in the next theorem. Theorem 2.3 The numbers c_p , $p \ge 1$, are well defined and are given explicitly by

$$c_{p} = \frac{1}{2^{p-1}(p-1)!} \sum_{k=0}^{\left\lfloor \frac{p-1}{2} \right\rfloor} (-1)^{k} {p \choose k} (p-2k)^{p-1}, p=1,2,3,...$$
(2.60)

$$= \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \left(\frac{\sin x}{x} \right)^{p} dx > 0, p = 1, 2, 3, \dots \quad (2.61)$$

Therefore, the polynomials (2.54) and (2.55) for $\lambda_{n,p}$ are of degree precisely p - 1 in n.

<u>Proof</u> By Theorem 2.2 and (2.52), it is clear that c_p is well defined if p is even. If p is odd, then the two expansions of (2.55) corresponding to n even and n odd, respectively, show that c_p is the same in both. Therefore, c_p is well defined. Then (2.60) follows by using (2.52) in Theorem 2.2 and examining the leading coefficient. Also, the integral (2.61) is given explicitly by Jolley [19] (see also Bromwich [8, page 518] where it is attributed without reference to Wolstenholme) and is seen to be identical to (2.60). Finally, from the integral expression (2.61), it is easy to see that c_p must be positive. This completes the proof.

We remark that the sum (2.60) seems to be related to Stirling numbers of the second kind. See [29, Part I, Chapter 4, Problem 189].

We remark also that Nuttall [27] states that the integral (2.61) is important in an electrical engineering application (where it appears in certain "nonlinear

systems subject to input processes with rectangular spectra"). From the integral (2.61), Nuttall derives the asymptotic expansion

$$c_{p} = \sqrt{\frac{6}{\pi p}} \left\{ 1 - \frac{3}{20} \cdot \frac{1}{p} - \frac{13}{1120} \cdot \frac{1}{p^{2}} + o\left(\frac{1}{p^{3}}\right) \right\}, p + \infty$$
(2.62)

and shows how to compute c rapidly to high accuracy (i.e., p 18 significant decimal digits) for any positive integer p.

Finally, based on the preceding theorems and Corollary 2.8, we make the following Conjectures:

- A. The polynomials (2.54) and (2.55) for $\lambda_{n,p}$ have positive coefficients.
- B. For each fixed integer $p \ge 1$, the polynomial expressions (2.54) and (2.55) for $\lambda_{n,p}$ each have an asymptotic expansion of the form

$$\lambda_{n,p} = c_p (n + 1)^{p-1} \left\{ 1 + o\left(\frac{1}{n^2}\right) \right\}, n \neq \infty$$

Conjecture B is really a conjecture about the coefficient of n^{p-2} since from Theorem 2.3 we clearly have the asymptotic expansion

$$\lambda_{n,p} = c_{p} (n + 1)^{p-1} \left\{ 1 + o\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) \right\}, n \neq \infty$$
 (2.63)

We now discuss $R_{n,2p}$ for p fixed as n goes to infinity. From Theorem 2.1 and (2.63), for each fixed $p \ge 1$, we have

$$R_{n,2p} \leq (c_p)^{\frac{1}{2p}} (n+1)^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}} \left\{ 1 + o\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) \right\}, n \neq \infty$$

and also

$$R_{n,2p} \ge (c_{2p})^{\frac{1}{2p}} (n+1)^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}} \left\{ 1 + o\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) \right\}, n \neq \infty$$

Therefore, it is very tempting to make Conjecture C:

$$R_{n,2p} = A_p(n + 1)^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}} \left\{ 1 + o(\frac{1}{n}) \right\}, n \to \infty$$

for each $p = 1, 2, ..., where A_p$ is a constant satisfying

$$(c_{2p})^{\frac{1}{2p}} \leq A_p \leq (c_p)^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

If Conjecture B is true, then we would replace o(1/n) in Conjecture C by $o(1/n^2)$. However, at this time we prove only the following theorem.

$$\frac{\text{Theorem 2.4}}{(c_{2p})^{\frac{1}{2p}}(n+1)^{\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{2p}}} \in R_{n,2p} \leq (c_p)^{\frac{1}{2p}} \left\{ n + \left(\frac{1}{c_p}\right)^{\frac{1}{p-1}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{2p}},$$
(2.64)

Furthermore, for p = 2 and 3,

$$\left(\frac{c_{2p}}{c_{p}}\right)^{\frac{1}{2p}} \left\{\lambda_{n,p}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} < R_{n,2p} < \left\{\lambda_{n,p}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}, n \ge 0 \qquad (2.65)$$

where

$$\left(\frac{c_4}{c_2}\right)^{\frac{1}{4}} = \left(\frac{2}{3}\right)^{\frac{1}{4}} \approx .90360, \quad \left(\frac{c_6}{c_3}\right)^{\frac{1}{6}} = \left(\frac{11}{15}\right)^{\frac{1}{6}} \approx .94962$$

<u>Proof</u> Direct computations in Corollary 2.8 show that for p = 2, 3, 4, and 5, we have

$$\lambda_{n,2p} > c_{2p}(n+1)^{2p-1}$$
 (2.66)

$$\lambda_{n,p} \leq c_{p} \left[n + \left(\frac{1}{c_{p}} \right)^{\frac{1}{p-1}} \right]^{p-1}$$
(2.67)

Applying (2.66) and (2.67) in (2.34) proves (2.64). The lower bound in (2.65) is proved similarly, since

$$\frac{\{\lambda_{n,4}\}^{\frac{1}{4}}}{\sqrt{n+1}} = \left\{\frac{\frac{2}{3}(n^{3}+3n^{2}+\frac{7}{2}n+\frac{3}{2})}{(n+1)^{2}}\right\}^{\frac{1}{4}}$$
$$> \left\{\frac{2}{3}(n+1)\right\}^{\frac{1}{4}} = \left(\frac{c_{4}}{c_{2}}\right)^{\frac{1}{4}}\{\lambda_{n,2}\}^{\frac{1}{4}}$$

and

$$\frac{\{\lambda_{n,6}\}^{\frac{1}{6}}}{\sqrt{n+1}} = \left\{\frac{\lambda_{n,6}}{(n+1)^{3}}\right\}^{\frac{1}{6}}$$

$$> \left\{\frac{11}{20} \cdot \frac{4}{3} \cdot (n^{2} + 2n + \frac{4}{3})\right\}^{\frac{1}{6}}$$

$$\ge \left(\frac{c_{6}}{c_{3}}\right)^{\frac{1}{6}} \{\lambda_{n,3}\}^{\frac{1}{6}}$$

This completes the proof.

Computation has shown that the first inequality in (2.65) is not valid for p = 4, so it cannot be generalized for larger p in a direct manner. The inequality (2.64) follows directly from (2.34). Therefore, the difficulty in generalizing (2.64) lies in extending (2.66) and (2.67) for all $p \ge 1$.

The next result is essentially a corollary of Corollary 2.8. We state it as a theorem because of its interesting form, as well as the fact that we conjecture it to

hold for all $p \ge 2$ and not merely the cases cited.

Theorem 2.5 For all integer $n \ge 0$, and for p = 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 8, and 10,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p} \leq (c_{p})^{\frac{1}{2p}} \left\{ n + \left(\frac{1}{c_{p}}\right)^{\frac{1}{p-1}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}$$
(2.68)

for all $\pi_n \in \mathcal{P}_n$ with equality if and only if $\pi_n = 0$.

<u>Proof</u> For p = 2, 3, 4, and 5, this is merely a restatement of Theorem 2.4. For p = 6, 8, and 10, (2.68) follows as in the proof of Theorem 2.4 by noting that (2.67) is valid for p = 6, 8, and 10 as well. This completes the proof.

A particularly nice result is (2.68) with p = 2; that is,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2} \leq \|\pi_{n}\|_{4} < (n+1)^{\frac{1}{4}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}$$
 (2.69)

The left hand inequality follows, as mentioned earlier, from Hölder's inequality. In particular, if π_n is restricted to have unit modulus coefficients, then $\|\pi_n\|_2 = \sqrt{n+1}$, and

$$(n + 1)^{\frac{1}{2}} \leq \|\pi_n\|_4 < (n + 1)^{\frac{3}{4}}$$
 (2.70)

The lower bound in Theorem 2.4 can be used to estimate how well the extremal polynomial of $R_{n,\infty}$, namely, $\pi_n^*(z)$ = 1 + z + ··· + z^n , approximates an extremal polynomial of $R_{n,2p}$. For example, since $c_{10} > (.91915)^{10}$ and

$$c_5 < (.95004)^{10}$$
, we have for $p = 5$
.91915(n + 1)^{2/5} $< \frac{\|\pi_n^*\|_{10}}{\|\pi_n^*\|_2}$
 $\leq R_{n,10}$
 $< .95004(n + 1.13672)^{2/5}$

In particular, for n = 100, we have

5.82257 <
$$\frac{\|\pi_{100}^{*}\|_{10}}{\|\pi_{100}^{*}\|_{2}} \leq R_{100,10} < 6.02152$$

This result is, of course, not as sharp as could be had from (2.34) using Corollary 2.8 (or Table II.2); that is,

5.82264 <
$$\frac{(\lambda_{100,10})^{\frac{1}{10}}}{\sqrt{101}} = \frac{\|\pi_{100}^{*}\|_{10}}{\|\pi_{100}^{*}\|_{2}}$$

 $\leq R_{100,10} < (\lambda_{100,5})^{\frac{1}{10}} < 6.01825$

with the first and last inequalities due merely to rounding the lower bound down and the upper bound up.

E. Extension to Derivatives

So far, bounds of the ratios of norms of π_n have been investigated. We now show that bounds similar in spirit to that of Theorem 2.1 can be given for ratios

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{'}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}}$$
(2.71)

where the prime denotes differentiation. An algebraic proof of such a bound requires new theorems very similar

in content and proof to Lemmas 2.1-2.3. The matrix identity (2.23) of Lemma 2.1 becomes

$$\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{2p} \equiv \left\{ \bar{u}^{T} M_{n,p}^{(1)} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
(2.72)

where $M_{n,p}^{(1)} = [m_{\alpha,\beta}^{(1)}]$ with

$$\mathfrak{m}_{\alpha,\beta}^{(1)} = \begin{pmatrix} p \\ \Pi \\ k=1 \end{pmatrix}^{\beta} \alpha_{1}^{\beta} \cdots \alpha_{p}^{\beta} \beta_{1}^{\beta} \cdots \beta_{p}^{\beta} \qquad (2.73)$$

The integers (2.27) in Lemma 2.2 become

$$N^{(1)}(\alpha) = \sum_{j_1, \dots, j_p=0}^{n} {p \\ I \\ k=1} j_k}^2$$
(2.74)

with the sum taken subject to the constraint $j_1 + \cdots + j_p = \alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p$, and the polynomial (2.28) becomes

$$(1 + 2^{2}z + 3^{2}z^{2} + \cdots + n^{2}z^{n-1})^{p}$$
 (2.75)

As in Lemma 2.3, the coefficients of the expansion of (2.75) can be shown to constitute all the nonzero eigenvalues of $M_{n,p}^{(1)}$. Defining $\lambda_{n,p}^{(1)}$ to be the largest coefficient in the expansion of (2.75), it is then easy to show that (2.71) is bounded above by $\lambda_{n,p}^{(1)}$.

This procedure gave the original proof of the next theorem. Fortunately, however, Donald J. Newman's short proof of part of Theorem 2.1 can be adapted to prove the same theorem with less work.

Notation: As mentioned above, let $\lambda_{n,p}^{(1)}$ be the largest coefficient in the expansion of (2.75) into ascending powers of z.

Theorem 2.6 For all
$$0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n$$
, and for $p = 1, 2, 3, \ldots,$

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq \{\lambda_{n,p}^{(1)}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} \leq n^{\frac{1}{p}}(1^{2} + 2^{2} + 3^{2} + \dots + n^{2})^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}}$$
(2.76)

Furthermore,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{'}\|_{\infty}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq \sqrt{\frac{1}{6} n(n+1)(2n+1)}$$
(2.77)

and equality is attained in (2.77) for

$$\pi_{n}(z) = z(1 + z + z^{2} + \dots + z^{n})'$$
Proof With $\pi_{n}(z) = a_{0} + a_{1}z + \dots + a_{n}z^{n} \neq 0$,
$$z\pi_{n}'(z) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} ka_{k}z^{k}$$
(2.78)

Now, let

$$z^{p}(1^{2} + 2^{2}z + 3^{2}z^{2} + \cdots + n^{2}z^{n-1})^{p} = \sum_{j=0}^{np} \lambda_{j}^{(1)} z^{j} (2.79)$$

so that

$$\lambda_{n,p}^{(1)} = \max_{0 \le j \le np} \lambda_{j}^{(1)}$$

With $z = e^{i\theta}$,

$$\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{2p}^{2p} = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{C} |\pi_{n}^{\prime}(z)|^{2p} |z|^{2p} d\theta$$
$$= \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{C} |[z\pi_{n}^{\prime}(z)]^{p}|^{2} d\theta$$
$$= \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{C} |[z\pi_{n}^{\prime}(z)]^{p}|^{2} d\theta$$

$$= \sum_{j=0}^{np} \left| \sum_{\alpha_1 + \cdots + \alpha_p = j}^{(\alpha_1 a_{\alpha_1}) \cdots (\alpha_p a_{\alpha_p})} \right|^2 \qquad (2.80)$$

with the sum over $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$. By Schwarz's Inequality,

$$\left| \begin{array}{c} \sum_{\alpha_{1}+\cdots+\alpha_{p}=j} (\alpha_{1}\cdots\alpha_{p}) (a_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}) \right|^{2} \\ \leq \left(\sum_{\alpha_{1}+\cdots+\alpha_{p}=j} |\alpha_{1}\cdots\alpha_{p}|^{2} \right) \\ \cdot \left(\sum_{\alpha_{1}+\cdots+\alpha_{p}=j} |a_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}|^{2} \right) \\ = \lambda_{j}^{(1)} \sum_{\alpha_{1}+\cdots+\alpha_{p}=j} |a_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}|^{2}$$

Hence, we have

$$\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{2p}^{2p} \leq \sum_{j=0}^{np} \left\{ \lambda_{j}^{(1)} \sum_{\alpha_{1}+\cdots+\alpha_{p}=j} |a_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}|^{2} \right\}$$
$$\leq \lambda_{n,p}^{(1)} \left\{ \sum_{j=0}^{n} |a_{j}|^{2} \right\}^{p}$$
$$= \lambda_{n,p}^{(1)} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{2p} \qquad (2.81)$$

This proves the first inequality in (2.76). From the identity

$$(1^{2} + 2^{2}z + \cdots + n^{2}z^{n-1})^{p}$$

= $(1^{2} + 2^{2}z + \cdots + n^{2}z^{n-1})$
 $\cdot (1^{2} + 2^{2}z + \cdots + n^{2}z^{n-1})^{p-1}, p \ge 1$

we have the inequality

$$\lambda_{n,p}^{(1)} \leq (1^2 + 2^2 + \cdots + n^2) \lambda_{n,p-1}^{(1)}$$

Since $\lambda_{n,1}^{(1)} = n^2$, this implies

$$\lambda_{n,p}^{(1)} \leq n^2 (1^2 + 2^2 + \dots + n^2)^{p-1}$$
 (2.82)

Extracting the 2p-th roots yields the second inequality in (2.76).

Finally, the Schwarz Inequality implies

$$\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{\infty} = \|\pi_{n}^{\prime}(z_{0})\|, \text{ some } z_{0} \in C$$

$$= \|\sum_{k=0}^{n} |ka_{k}z_{0}^{k}\|$$

$$\leq \left\{\sum_{k=0}^{n} |kz_{0}^{k}|^{2}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \left\{\sum_{k=0}^{n} |a_{k}|^{2}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$= \left(\sum_{k=0}^{n} |k^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2} \qquad (2.83)$$

with equality possible in (2.83) for $n \ge 0$, e.g., with $\tilde{\pi}_n(z) = z(1 + z + \cdots + z^n)'$. Using the identity

$$\sum_{k=0}^{n} k^{2} = \frac{n(n+1)(2n+1)}{6}$$
(2.84)

in (2.83) completes the proof.

Corollary 2.9 For all $0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n$, and for $p = 1, 2, 3, \ldots,$

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} < \left(\frac{1}{3}\right)^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}} (n+1)^{\frac{3}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}}, n = 0, 1, 2, \dots (2.85)$$

Proof Follows from (2.76) and (2.84).

<u>Corollary 2.10</u> For all $0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n$

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{'}\|_{2}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq n \tag{2.86}$$

with equality possible in (2.86) for all $n \ge 0$.

<u>Proof</u> Use (2.76) since $\lambda_{n,1}^{(1)} = n^2$. Let $\pi_n(z) = z^n$ to prove equality in (2.86).

The inequality (2.86) can be obtained directly. For $\pi_n(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + \cdots + a_n z^n$,

$$\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{2} = \left\|\sum_{k=0}^{n} \kappa a_{k} z^{k-1}\right\|_{2}$$
$$= \left[\sum_{k=0}^{n} \kappa^{2} |a_{k}|^{2}\right]^{\frac{1}{2}}$$
$$\leq n \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}$$

This method shows easily that the maximum in (2.86) is attained only for nonzero constant multiples of $\pi_n(z) = z^n$.

These results are easily generalized to higher order derivatives. Define $\lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}$ for k = 0, 1, ..., n, to be the largest coefficient in the expansion of

 $\left\{\sum_{\substack{k=k\\k=k}}^{n} \binom{2}{k}^{2} z^{2-k}\right\}^{p}$ (2.87)

into ascending powers of z. Denote the k-th derivative of π_n by $\pi_n^{(k)}$.

Theorem 2.7 Let $0 \le k \le n$. For all $0 \ne \pi_n \in P_n$, and for $p = 1, 2, 3, \ldots$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{(k)}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq k! \left\{ \lambda_{n,p}^{(k)} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

$$\leq k! \binom{n}{k}^{\frac{1}{p}} Q^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}}$$
(2.88)
(2.89)

< k! √Q (2.90)

where

$$Q = \sum_{\substack{\ell=k}}^{n} {\binom{\ell}{k}}^2$$
(2.91)

Furthermore,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{(k)}\|_{\infty}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq k! \sqrt{Q}$$

$$< k! \sqrt{n-k+1} \binom{n}{k}$$
(2.92)

with equality attained in (2.92) by

 $\pi_n(z) = z^k (1 + z + z^2 + \cdots + z^n)^{(k)}$

The proof of this theorem so closely follows the proof of Theorem 2.6 that it is not given here. Alternatively, the proof could proceed algebraically by proving results analogous to Lemmas 2.1-2.3. We emphasize that (2.88) is the spectral radius of an operator $M_{n,p}^{(k)}$ which can be defined in a manner analogous to $M_{n,p}$ in (2.23) and $M_{n,p}^{(1)}$ in (2.72).

A more natural bound than (2.88) is given later in Theorem 3.7. The result given there is not, however, as good as (2.88).
$\frac{\text{Corollary 2.11}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \text{ Under the conditions of Theorem 2.7,} \\ \frac{\|\pi_{n}^{(k)}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} < \left(\frac{1}{2k+1}\right)^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}} (n+1)^{k+\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}} (2.93)$

Proof From (2.91),

 $Q < \left(\frac{1}{k!}\right)^{2} \sum_{j=k}^{n} j^{2k} < \left(\frac{1}{k!}\right)^{2} \int_{k}^{n+1} t^{2k} dt = \frac{(n+1)^{2k+1}}{(2k+1)(k!)^{2}}$

so that in (2.89),

$$k! \binom{n}{k}^{\frac{1}{p}} Q^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}} < (k!)^{1 - \frac{1}{p}} n^{\frac{k}{p}} \left\{ \frac{(n+1)^{2k+1}}{(2k+1)(k!)^{2}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2p}}$$

which proves (2.93).

Better estimates than (2.93) can, of course, be found by using better estimates of Q in the proof of Corollary 2.11.

Corollary 2.12 Under the conditions of Theorem 2.7, $\lim_{p \neq \infty} \{\lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}\}^{\frac{1}{p}} = Q \qquad (2.94)$

Proof Define

$$T_n(z) = \sum_{j=0}^n j(j-1) \cdots (j-k+1) z^j$$

Then

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{(k)}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq k! \{\lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} \leq k! \sqrt{Q}$$

Since

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{(k)}\|_{\infty}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} = k! \sqrt{Q}$$

(2.94) follows immediately.

Chapter III

COMPLEX FINITE DIMENSIONAL FUNCTION SPACES

A. General Spaces

The method of the preceding chapter can be generalized considerably. One direction is to replace the unit circle by a rectifiable Jordan curve as in Szegö [31, Chap. XVI]. Another direction is to replace the unit circle by a real interval and change the integral to some Lebesgue-Stieltjes integral as in Szegö [31, Chap. I]. A modified version of this latter direction is taken here because of the nature of the examples in Chapter IV; however, the last part of this chapter deals again with complex polynomials on the unit circle.

Let $\omega(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ be nonnegative Lebesgue measurable functions on the real intervals (a,b) and (c,d), respectively, such that $-\infty \le a < b \le +\infty$, $-\infty \le c < d \le +\infty$, and

$$0 < \int_{a}^{b} \omega(t) dt < +\infty, \qquad 0 < \int_{c}^{d} \phi(t) dt < +\infty \qquad (3.1)$$

We further assume that $\omega(t) > 0$ almost everywhere on (a,b). For extended real numbers $p \ge 1$, let $L_p^{\omega}[a,b]$ be the class of measurable complex valued functions f on (a,b) such that

where the inf in (3.3) is taken over all bounded measurable functions g on (a,b) which equal f almost everywhere. Note that $\|f\|_{\infty}^{\omega}$ is not necessarily equal to $\|f\|_{\infty}^{\phi}$ because these norms depend on the interval of definition of ω and ϕ , respectively. Note also, that $\omega(t) > 0$ almost everywhere on (a,b) implies that $\|f\|_{p}^{\omega} = 0$ if and only if f(t) = 0 almost everywhere on (a,b). From this point on, we will consider two measurable functions equivalent on (a,b) if they are equal almost everywhere on (a,b). As is customary, we regard $L_{p}^{\omega}[a,b]$ and $L_{p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ as equivalence classes of functions. Therefore,

$$(f,g)_{\omega} = \int_{a}^{b} f(t)\overline{g(t)} (t)dt \qquad (3.4)$$

defines an inner product on $L_2^{\omega}[a,b]$.

Lemma 3.1 Let $p \ge 2$ be an integer. Let $g_k \in L_p^{\phi}[c,d]$, $k = 1, \ldots, p$. Then

$$\int_{c}^{d} \left| \begin{array}{c} p \\ \Pi \\ k=1 \end{array} \right|_{k=1}^{q} g_{k}(t) \left| \phi(t) dt \leq \begin{array}{c} p \\ \Pi \\ k=1 \end{array} \right|_{k=1}^{q} \left\| g_{k} \right\|_{p}^{\phi}$$
(3.5)

If $g_k \neq 0$, k = 1, ..., p, almost everywhere on (c,d), and if $\phi(t) > 0$ almost everywhere on (c,d), then (3.5) is an equality if and only if there exist nonzero constants c_1 , ..., c_p such that $c_1|g_1| = c_2|g_2| = \cdots = c_p|g_p|$ almost everywhere on (c,d).

Proof For p = 2, the Cauchy-Schwarz Inequality gives

$$\int_{c}^{d} |g_{1}(t)g_{2}(t)|\phi(t)dt \leq ||g_{1}||_{2}^{\phi} ||g_{2}||_{2}^{\phi}$$

If $g_1 \neq 0$, $g_2 \neq 0$, and $\phi(t) > 0$ almost everywhere on (c,d), then we have equality iff there exist nonzero constants c_1 and c_2 such that $c_1|g_1| = c_2|g_2|$ almost everywhere on (c,d). Now, suppose the result holds for some $p \ge 2$. With $\frac{1}{p+1} + \frac{1}{q} = 1$,

$$\int_{c}^{d} \left| \substack{p+1 \\ \Pi} \\ g_{k} \right| \phi = \int_{c}^{d} |g_{p+1}| \left| \substack{p \\ \Pi} \\ g_{p+1} \right|^{p+1} \phi \right|^{\frac{1}{p+1}} \left(\int_{c}^{d} |g_{1} \cdots g_{p}|^{q} \phi \right)^{\frac{1}{q}} (3.6)$$

$$\leq ||g_{p+1}||_{p+1}^{\phi} \left(\frac{p}{\Pi} ||(|g_{k}|)^{q}||_{p}^{\phi} \right)^{\frac{1}{q}} (3.7)$$

$$= \prod_{k=1}^{p+1} \|g_k\|_{p+1}^{\phi} < +\infty$$
 (3.8)

where (3.6) is Hölder's inequality, (3.7) is the induction hypothesis, and (3.8) follows from pq = p + 1. If $g_k \neq 0$, k = 1, ..., p, and $\phi(t) > 0$ almost everywhere on (c,d), then (3.6) is an equality iff there exist nonzero constants a and β such that

$$\alpha |g_{p+1}|^{p+1} = \beta |g_1 \cdots g_p|^q$$
 a.e. (3.9)

By the induction hypothesis, equality holds in (3.7) iff there exist nonzero constants c_1, \ldots, c_p such that

$$c_1|g_1| = \cdots = c_p|g_p|$$
, a.e. (3.10)

Therefore,

$$\int_{c}^{d} \left| \begin{array}{c} p+1 \\ \Pi \\ k=1 \end{array} \right| q_{k} \left| \phi \right| = \begin{array}{c} p+1 \\ \Pi \\ k=1 \end{array} \| q_{k} \|_{p+1}^{\phi}$$

if and only if (3.9) and (3.10) both hold. Now (3.9) and (3.10) imply

$$\alpha |g_{p+1}|^{p+1} = \beta \left[\left[\frac{c_p}{c_1} |g_p| \right] \left[\frac{c_p}{c_2} |g_p| \right] \cdots \left[|g_p| \right] \right]^q, \quad \text{a.e.}$$
$$= \delta |g_p|^{pq}, \qquad \text{a.e.}$$
$$= \delta |g_p|^{p+1}, \qquad \text{a.e.}$$

where δ is the obvious nonzero constant. With

$$c_{p+1} = \left(\frac{\alpha c_p}{\delta}\right)^{\frac{1}{p+1}}$$

we see that

$$c_1|g_1| = \cdots = c_p|g_p| = c_{p+1}|g_{p+1}|$$
, a.e. (3.11)

Lemma 3.2 Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Let P_n be a subspace of $L_2^{\omega}[a,b] \cap L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ with a basis $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots, h_n\}$ which is orthonormal with respect to the inner product $(f,g)_{\omega}$. Let

 $\pi_n(t) = a_0 h_0(t) + a_1 h_1(t) + \cdots + a_n h_n(t) \in P_n$

and let $x = \langle a_0 | a_1 | \cdots | a_n \rangle^T \in c^{n+1}$. Then

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} = \{\bar{u}^{T} L_{n,p}^{\phi} u\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
 (3.12)

and

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega} = \{\bar{u}^{T} | u \}^{\frac{1}{2p}} = \{\bar{u}^{T} | u \}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
(3.13)

where $u = x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$ (p factors of x) $\in c^{(n+1)^{p}}$, I is the identity matrix of order $(n+1)^{p}$, and $L_{n,p}^{\phi} = [\mu_{\alpha,\beta}]$ is the hermitian matrix of dimension $(n+1)^{p} \times (n+1)^{p}$ given by

$$\mu_{\alpha,\beta} = (h_{\beta_1} \cdots h_{\beta_p}, h_{\alpha_1} \cdots h_{\alpha_p})_{\phi} < +\infty$$
(3.14)

for all $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma, \beta = (\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p) \in \Gamma.$

Proof Since

$$[\pi_{n}(t)]^{p} = \sum_{\alpha_{1},\dots,\alpha_{p}=0}^{n} a_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}h_{\alpha_{1}}(t)\cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}(t) \quad (3.15)$$

we have

$$\begin{split} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi})^{2p} &= \int_{c}^{d} [\pi_{n}(t)]^{p} [\overline{\pi_{n}(t)}]^{p} \phi(t) dt \\ &= \int_{c}^{d} \left[\sum_{\beta_{1}, \dots, \beta_{p}=0}^{n} a_{\beta_{1}} \cdots a_{\beta_{p}} h_{\beta_{1}} \cdots h_{\beta_{p}} \right] \\ &\cdot \left[\sum_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}=0}^{n} \overline{a_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots a_{\alpha_{p}} h_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}} \right] \phi \\ &= \sum_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}=0}^{n} \sum_{\beta_{1}, \dots, \beta_{p}=0}^{n} \overline{a_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots a_{\alpha_{p}} h_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}} d_{\beta_{1}} \cdots d_{\beta_{p}} \mu_{\alpha, \beta} \\ &= \overline{u}^{T} L_{n, p}^{\phi} u \end{split}$$

This proves (3.12). That $L_{n,p}^{\phi}$ is hermitian follows from $\mu_{\alpha,\beta} = \overline{\mu_{\beta,\alpha}}$. The finiteness of (3.14) is an immediate consequence of Lemma 3.1. Finally, since the basis is orthonormal,

$$(\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega})^{2} = |a_{0}|^{2} + |a_{1}|^{2} + \dots + |a_{n}|^{2}$$
$$= \sum_{k=0}^{n} a_{k} \overline{a_{k}}$$

so that

$$(\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega})^{2p} = \left(\sum_{k=0}^{n} a_{k} \overline{a_{k}}\right)^{p}$$

$$= \sum_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}=0}^{n} (a_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}) (\overline{a_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}})$$

$$= \overline{u}^{T} u$$

This concludes the proof.

Lemma 3.3 Under the hypotheses of Lemma 3.2, the matrix $L_{n,p}^{\phi}$ is positive semidefinite.

<u>Proof</u> Let $v = \langle v_{\alpha} \rangle$, $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$, be an arbitrary vector in $C^{(n+1)P}$. Then, with $\beta = (\beta_1, \dots, \beta_p) \in \Gamma$,

$$L_{n,p}^{\phi} v = \langle \sum_{\beta \in \Gamma} \mu_{\alpha,\beta} v_{\beta} \rangle_{\alpha \in \Gamma}$$
$$= \langle \sum_{\beta_{1}, \dots, \beta_{p}} (h_{\beta_{1}} \cdots h_{\beta_{p}}, h_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}) \phi^{v_{\beta_{1}}}, \dots, \beta_{p} \rangle_{\alpha \in \Gamma}$$
$$= \langle (v_{0}, h_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}) \phi \rangle_{\alpha \in \Gamma}$$

where

$$\mathbf{v}_{0} = \sum_{\beta_{1}, \dots, \beta_{p}=0}^{n} \mathbf{v}_{\beta_{1}, \dots, \beta_{p}} \mathbf{h}_{\beta_{1}} \cdots \mathbf{h}_{\beta_{p}}$$

Therefore,

$$\overline{\mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{T}}\mathbf{L}_{\mathbf{n},\mathbf{p}}^{\phi}\mathbf{v} = \sum_{\alpha_{1},\ldots,\alpha_{p}=0}^{n} \overline{\mathbf{v}}_{\alpha_{1},\ldots,\alpha_{p}}(\mathbf{v}_{0},\mathbf{h}_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots\mathbf{h}_{\alpha_{p}})\phi$$
$$= (\mathbf{v}_{0},\mathbf{v}_{0})_{\phi} \ge 0$$

Since a hermitian matrix is positive semidefinite if and only if its hermitian form is nonnegative, the proof is complete.

The next result uses the term "reproducing kernel." This terminology is not universally accepted. For example, Szegö [31, equation (3.19)] uses simply "kernel polynomial" when discussing algebraic polynomials. In any event, all that is needed here is the definition embodied in (3.17).

Theorem 3.1 Under the hypotheses of Lemma 3.2, the trace of $L_{n,p}^{\phi}$ is given by

Trace
$$(L_{n,p}^{\phi}) = \left\{ \|K_{n}(t,t)\|_{p}^{\phi} \right\}^{p}$$
 (3.16)

where

$$\kappa_{n}(t,s) \equiv \sum_{k=0}^{n} h_{k}(t)\overline{h_{k}(s)}$$
(3.17)

is the "reproducing kernel" of P_n in $L_2^{\omega}[a,b]$.

<u>Proof</u> Trace $(L_{n,p}^{\phi}) = \sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} \mu_{\alpha,\alpha}$

$$= \sum_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}=0} \int_{c}^{d} h_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}} \overline{h_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}} \phi$$

$$= \int_{c}^{d} \left\{ \sum_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}=0}^{n} |h_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}|^{2} \right\} \phi$$

$$= \int_{c}^{d} \left\{ \sum_{k=0}^{n} |h_{k}|^{2} \right\}^{p} \phi$$

$$= \left\{ ||K_{n}(t, t)||_{p}^{\phi} \right\}^{p}$$

This completes the proof.

Corollary 3.4 Under the conditions of Theorem 3.1, for all $0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} \leq \sqrt{\|\kappa_{n}(t,t)\|_{p}^{\phi}}$$
(3.18)

<u>Proof</u> Put $\pi_n(t) = a_0 h_0(t) + a_1 h_1(t) + \cdots + a_n h_n(t)$. By Lemma 3.2,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} = \left\{ \frac{\overline{u}^{T} L_{n,p}^{\phi} u}{\overline{u}^{T} u} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

$$\leq \left\{ \max_{v} \frac{\overline{v}^{T} L_{n,p}^{\phi} v}{\overline{v}^{T} v} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

$$= \left\{ \lambda \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
(3.19)

where v is an arbitrary vector in $C^{(n+1)^p}$ and λ is the largest eigenvalue of $L_{n,p}^{\phi}$. Since the trace is the sum of the eigenvalues and $L_{n,p}^{\phi}$ is positive semidefinite and so has only nonnegative eigenvalues (see, e.g., [24, Section 4.12]),

 $\lambda \leq \text{Trace} (L_{n,p}^{\phi})$

and this proves the corollary.

Note that Corollary 3.4 is merely a special case of Theorem 1.1. See also Theorem 3.4 and Corollary 3.11.

B. Spaces Satisfying a Nonnegativity Condition

We now restrict our attention to those spaces for which $L_{n,p}^{\phi}$ is a nonnegative matrix, i.e., has only nonnegative entries.

<u>Definition</u> The functions $\{f_0, f_1, \dots, f_n\} \in L_2^{\omega}[a,b]$ $\cap L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ satisfy the <u>Nonnegativity Condition</u> in $L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ if and only if

$$0 \leq (\mathbf{f}_{\beta_1} \cdots \mathbf{f}_{\beta_p}, \mathbf{f}_{\alpha_1} \cdots \mathbf{f}_{\alpha_p})_{\phi} < +\infty$$
(3.20)

for every choice of $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$ and $\beta = (\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p) \in \Gamma$.

Note that the finiteness of the inner products in (3.20) is implied by the requirement that each f_k be in L^{ϕ}_{2p} [c,d] and Lemma 3.1.

It is clear that the matrix $L_{n,p}^{\phi}$ defined in (3.12) is nonnegative if and only if the orthonormal basis $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots, h_n\}$ of P_n in $L_2^{\omega}[a,b]$ satisfies the Nonnegativity Condition in the space $L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$. This condition may seem to be very restrictive, but an inspection of the examples in Chapter IV shows that a great many of the classical orthonormal polynomials in $L_2^{\omega}[-1,+1]$ satisfy the Nonnegativity Condition in $L_{2p}^{\phi}[-1,+1]$ for many different weight functions ϕ .

<u>Theorem 3.2</u> Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Let P_n be a subspace of $L_2^{\omega}[a,b] \cap L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ with a basis $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots, h_n\}$ which is orthonormal with respect to the inner product $(f,g)_{\omega}$ and satisfies the Nonnegativity Condition in $L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$. Then, for all $0 \ne \pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} \leq \max_{0 \leq k \leq n} \sqrt{\|h_{k}S_{n}\|_{p}^{\phi}}$$
(3.21)

where

$$S_n(t) = h_0(t) + h_1(t) + \cdots + h_n(t)$$
 (3.22)

<u>Proof</u> Let $\pi_n(t) = a_0 h_0(t) + \cdots + a_n h_n(t) \neq 0$. First, suppose that there does not exist h_k with $\|h_k\|_{2p}^{\phi} > 0$. Then $\|h_k\|_{2p}^{\phi} = 0$ for all k, and Minkowski's inequality gives

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \leq \sum_{k=0}^{n} |a_{k}| \|h_{k}\|_{2p}^{\phi} = 0$$

Hence the left hand side of (3.21) is identically zero and (3.21) necessarily true. On the other hand, suppose there does exist k such that $\|h_k\|_{2p}^{\phi} > 0$. Then, via (3.20),

$$\| \mathbf{h}_{k} \|_{2p}^{\phi} = \left\{ \int_{c}^{d} (\mathbf{h}_{k})^{p} (\bar{\mathbf{h}}_{k})^{p} \phi \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

$$= \left\{ \int_{c}^{d} (\mathbf{s}_{n})^{p} (\bar{\mathbf{s}}_{n})^{p} \phi \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

$$= \| \mathbf{s}_{n} \|_{2p}^{\phi}$$

(3.23)

Therefore,

$$0 < \int_{c}^{a} |s_{n}(t)|^{p} \phi(t) dt < +\infty \qquad (3.24)$$

Now, from (3.12) and (3.13),

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} = \left\{\frac{\overline{u}^{T} L_{n,p}^{\phi} u}{\overline{u}^{T} u}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

$$\leq \max_{v} \left\{\frac{\overline{v}^{T} L_{n,p}^{\phi} v}{\overline{v}^{T} v}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}} \leq \{\lambda\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$

where v is an arbitrary nonzero vector in $\mathbf{c}^{(n+1)^p}$, and λ is the largest eigenvalue of the hermitian positive semidefinite matrix $L_{n,p}^{\phi}$. Furthermore, $L_{n,p}^{\phi}$ is nonnegative because of the Nonnegativity Condition in L_{2p}^{ϕ} [c,d]. Now Gershgorin's theorem (see, e.g., Marcus and Minc [24, Section 2.2]) applied to any nonnegative matrix implies that the largest row sum is an upper bound for all the eigenvalues. Thus, from (3.14),

$$\lambda \stackrel{\leq}{=} \max_{\alpha \in \Gamma} \left\{ \sum_{\beta \in \Gamma} \mu_{\alpha, \beta} \right\}$$

$$= \max_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}} \left\{ \begin{array}{c} n \\ \beta_{1}, \dots, \beta_{p} = 0 \end{array}^{(h_{\beta_{1}} \cdots h_{\beta_{p}}, h_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}) \phi} \right\}$$

$$= \max_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}} \left(\begin{array}{c} \sum h_{\beta_{1}} \cdots h_{\beta_{p}}, h_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}} \phi \\ \beta_{1}, \dots, \beta_{p} \end{array}^{(h_{\beta_{1}} \cdots h_{\beta_{p}}) \phi} \right)$$

$$= \max_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}} \left(\begin{array}{c} (s_{n})^{p}, h_{\alpha_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}} \phi \\ \beta_{1} \cdots \beta_{p} \end{array}^{(h_{\beta_{1}} \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}) \phi} \right)$$

$$\leq \max_{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}} \int_{c}^{d} \left[h_{\alpha_{1}}(t) \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}(t) \right] \left[s_{n}(t) \right]^{p} \phi(t) dt \quad (3.26)$$

Now let $W(t) = \phi(t) |s_n(t)|^p$. Then (3.24) implies that Lemma 3.1 can be applied in (3.26) to get

$$\lambda \leq \max_{\substack{\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p} \\ 0 \leq k \leq n}} \int_{c}^{d} |h_{\alpha_{1}}(t) \cdots h_{\alpha_{p}}(t)| W(t) dt$$
$$= \max_{\substack{0 \leq k \leq n \\ 0 \leq k \leq n}} \int_{c}^{d} |h_{k}(t)|^{p} W(t) dt$$
$$= \max_{\substack{0 \leq k \leq n \\ 0 \leq k \leq n}} \int_{c}^{d} |h_{k}(t) s_{n}(t)|^{p} \phi(t) dt$$

Since (3.21) follows immediately, this concludes the proof.

Corollary 3.5 Under the conditions of Theorem 3.2,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} \leq \inf \sqrt{B_{rp}^{\phi}\|S_{n}\|_{sp}^{\phi}} < +\infty$$
(3.27)

where

$$B_{rp}^{\phi} = \max_{0 \le k \le n} \|h_k\|_{rp}^{\phi}$$
(3.28)

and the infimum in (3.27) is taken over all extended real numbers $r \ge 1$ and $s \ge 1$ satisfying $\frac{1}{r} + \frac{1}{s} = 1$.

Proof From Hölder's inequality,

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{c}^{d} |h_{k} s_{n}|^{p} \phi &= \int_{c}^{d} |h_{k}^{p}| |s_{n}^{p}| \phi \\ &\leq \left\{ \int_{c}^{d} |h_{k}^{p}|^{r} \phi \right\}^{\frac{1}{r}} \left\{ \int_{c}^{d} |s_{n}^{p}|^{s} \phi \right\}^{\frac{1}{s}} \\ &= \left(\|h_{k}\|_{rp}^{\phi} \|s_{n}\|_{sp}^{\phi} \right)^{p}, \quad k = 0, 1, ..., n \end{aligned}$$

which proves the first inequality (3.27). The finiteness

of the bound follows from the case r = s = 2 and the fact that $P_n \subset L^{\phi}_{2p}[c,d]$. This completes the proof.

Corollary 3.6 Under the conditions of Theorem 3.2, for all $\pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \leq \|S_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$
(3.29)

and

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \leq \sqrt{n+1} B_{2p}^{\phi} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$
(3.30)

Proof From Minkowski's Inequality,

$$\|S_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \leq \sum_{k=0}^{n} \|h_{k}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \leq (n + 1)B_{2p}^{\phi}$$

On the other hand, (3.23) proves that

$$B_{2p}^{\phi} = \max_{0 \le k \le n} \|h_k\|_{2p}^{\phi} \le \|S_n\|_{2p}^{\phi}$$

Also, for r = s = 2 in Corollary 3.5, we have

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \leq \sqrt{B_{2p}^{\phi}}\|S_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$
(3.31)

The last three inequalities prove (3.29) and (3.30) immediately.

Corollary 3.7 Under the conditions of Theorem 3.2,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} \leq \left\{ B_{\infty}^{\phi} \|S_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\phi} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \left\{ \frac{\|S_{n}\|_{2}^{\phi}}{\|S_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\phi}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{p}}, \quad p \geq 2 \qquad (3.32)$$

provided the norms $\|h_k\|_{\infty}^{\phi}$, k = 0, 1, ..., n, are finite.

$$\frac{\operatorname{Proof}}{\left(\|\mathbf{h}_{k}\mathbf{s}_{n}\|_{p}^{\Phi}\right)^{p}} = \int_{c}^{d} |\mathbf{h}_{k}\mathbf{s}_{n}|^{p} \phi$$

$$\leq \left(\|\mathbf{h}_{k}\mathbf{s}_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\Phi}\right)^{p-2} \int_{c}^{d} |\mathbf{h}_{k}\mathbf{s}_{n}|^{2} \phi$$

$$\leq \left(\|\mathbf{h}_{k}\|_{\infty}^{\Phi}\|\mathbf{s}_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\Phi}\right)^{p-2} \left(\|\mathbf{h}_{k}\|_{\infty}^{\Phi}\right)^{2} \int_{c}^{d} |\mathbf{s}_{n}|^{2} \phi$$

$$= \left(\|\mathbf{h}_{k}\|_{\infty}^{\Phi}\right)^{p} \left(\|\mathbf{s}_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\Phi}\right)^{p-2} \left(\|\mathbf{s}_{n}\|_{2}^{\Phi}\right)^{2}$$

Extracting 2p-th roots proves (3.32).

The examples studied in Chapter IV will show that (3.32) gives (in some spaces) the same order of magnitude bounds for all 2p norms that the next theorem gives for all 2^p norms. For example, when (a,b) = (c,d) = (-1,+1)and $\phi(t) = \omega(t) = 1$, Lemma 4.5 will show that the Nonnegativity Condition required in Theorem 3.3 is satisfied. Therefore, from (3.36), for all polynomials π_n of degree at most n with real or complex coefficients, we have

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2^{p}}^{\omega} \leq \left[(n+1)(n+\frac{1}{2}) \right]^{\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{2^{p}}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$

$$\leq (n+1)^{1-\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}, \quad p = 1, 2, 3, \dots \quad (3.33)$$

since

$$\left\{\sqrt{k+\frac{1}{2}} P_{k}(t)\right\}$$

form the orthonormal basis $\{h_k\}$, where $P_k(t)$ is the k-th degree Legendre polynomial, and $B_{\infty}^{\omega} = \sqrt{n + \frac{1}{2}}$. On the other hand, Corollary 3.7 will lead to Theorem 4.2, which in this space implies that

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\omega} \leq A(n + \frac{3}{2})^{1 - \frac{1}{p}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}, p = 1, 2, 3, ...$$

where the constant A can be taken equal to $\sqrt{3/2} \exp(1/12)$.

<u>Theorem 3.3</u> Let $p \ge 2$ be an integer. Let P_n be a subspace of $L_2^{\omega}[a,b] \cap L_{2^p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ with a basis $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots, h_n\}$ which is orthonormal with respect to the inner product $(f,g)_{\omega}$ and satisfies the Nonnegativity Condition in the spaces $L_{2^k}^{\phi}[c,d]$, $k = 2, \ldots, p$. If $B_{\infty}^{\phi} < \infty$, then for all $\pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \leq \left\{\sqrt{n+1} \ B_{\infty}^{\phi}\right\}^{1-\frac{1}{2p-1}} \left\{\frac{\|S_{n}\|_{2}^{\phi}}{\sqrt{n+1}}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p-1}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$
(3.34)

and

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2^{p}}^{\phi} \leq \left\{\|S_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\phi}\right\}^{1-\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \left\{B_{2}^{\phi}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$
(3.35)

<u>Proof</u> (By induction on p) Let p = 2. For $r = \infty$ and s = 1 in (3.27) gives, for all $\pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{4}^{\phi} \leq \sqrt{B_{\infty}^{\phi}\|S_{n}\|_{2}^{\phi}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$

which proves (3.34) for p = 2. Now, suppose (3.34) holds for some $p \ge 2$. Then, put $\pi_n = S_n$ in (3.34) to get

$$\|\mathbf{S}_{n}\|_{2^{p}}^{\phi} \leq \left\{\sqrt{n+1} \ \mathbf{B}_{\infty}^{\phi}\right\}^{1-\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \left\{\frac{\|\mathbf{S}_{n}\|_{2}^{\phi}}{\sqrt{n+1}}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \sqrt{n+1}$$

From (3.27), with $r = \infty$ and s = 1,

$$\begin{aligned} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\phi} &= \sqrt{B_{\infty}^{\phi}\|S_{n}\|_{2}^{\phi}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega} \\ &\leq \left[B_{\infty}^{\phi} \left\{ \sqrt{n+1} B_{\infty}^{\phi} \right\}^{1 - \frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \left\{ \frac{\|S_{n}\|_{2}^{\phi}}{\sqrt{n+1}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \sqrt{n+1} \right]^{\frac{1}{2}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega} \\ &= \left\{ \sqrt{n+1} B_{\infty}^{\phi} \right\}^{1 - \frac{1}{2^{p}}} \left\{ \frac{\|S_{n}\|_{2}^{\phi}}{\sqrt{n+1}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2^{p}}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega} \end{aligned}$$

and this completes the proof of (3.34). The proof of (3.35) is similar. Let r = 1 and $s = \infty$ in (3.27), so that for all $\pi_n \in P_n$,

 $\|\boldsymbol{\pi}_{n}\|_{4}^{\phi} \leq \sqrt{B_{2}^{\phi}\|\boldsymbol{S}_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\phi}} \|\boldsymbol{\pi}_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$

which proves (3.35) for p = 2. Now, suppose that (3.35) holds for some $p \ge 2$. Then put $\pi_n = h_k$ in (3.35) to get

$$\|h_{k}\|_{2^{p}}^{\phi} \leq \{\|S_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\phi}\}^{1-\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \{B_{2}^{\phi}\}^{\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \cdot 1$$

so that

$$B_{2^{p}}^{\phi} \leq \{\|S_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\phi}\}^{1 - \frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \{B_{2}^{\phi}\}^{\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}}$$

Therefore, by (3.27) with r = 1 and $s = \infty$,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2^{p+1}}^{\phi} \leq \sqrt{B_{2^{p}}^{\phi}\|S_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\phi}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$

$$\leq \left\{ \left(\| \mathbf{s}_{n} \|_{\infty}^{\phi} \right)^{1 - \frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \| \mathbf{s}_{n} \|_{\infty}^{\phi} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \| \mathbf{\pi}_{n} \|_{2}^{\omega}$$
$$= \left(\| \mathbf{s}_{n} \|_{\infty}^{\phi} \right)^{1 - \frac{1}{2^{p}}} \| \mathbf{s}_{2} \|_{2}^{\frac{1}{2^{p}}} \| \mathbf{\pi}_{n} \|_{2}^{\omega}$$

which completes the proof of (3.35).

<u>Corollary 3.8</u> Under the conditions of Theorem 3.3, if $\phi(t) = \omega(t)$ almost everywhere on (a,b), then

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2^{p}}^{\omega} \leq \left(\sqrt{n+1} \ B_{\infty}^{\omega}\right)^{1-\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$
(3.36)

and

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2^{p}}^{\omega} \leq \left(\|s_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\omega}\right)^{1-\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$
(3.37)

<u>Proof</u> Follows from Theorem 3.3, since $B_2^{\omega} = 1$ and $\|S_n\|_2^{\omega} = \sqrt{n+1}$.

We remark that (3.36) and (3.37) give the same bound as (3.30) and (3.29), respectively, as $p \neq \infty$ for the case $\phi = \omega$.

C. Extension to Linear Transformations on the Space

The preceding development can be extended easily to finding upper bounds for ratios of the form

$$\frac{\|D\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}}$$
(3.38)

where D is some suitable linear transformation on P_n . Typically, D will be a derivative of some order. The next lemma generalizes Lemma 3.2 and does not require the

Nonnegativity Condition.

Lemma 3.9 Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Let P_n be a subspace of $L_2^{\omega}[a,b] \cap L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ with a basis $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots, h_n\}$ which is orthonormal with respect to the inner product $(f,g)_{\omega}$. Let $D:P_n \neq L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ be any linear transformation on P_n . Let

$$\pi_{n}(t) = a_{0}h_{0}(t) + a_{1}h_{1}(t) + \cdots + a_{n}h_{n}(t) \in P_{n}$$

and let $x = \langle a_0 a_1 \cdots a_n \rangle^T \in C^{n+1}$. Then

$$\|D\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \equiv \{\bar{u}^{T} E_{n,p}^{\phi} u\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
(3.39)

where $u = x \otimes \cdots \otimes x$ (p factors of x) $\in c^{(n+1)^p}$, and $E_{n,p}^{\phi} = [v_{\alpha,\beta}]$ is the hermitian matrix of dimension $(n+1)^p$ × $(n+1)^p$ given by

$$\nu_{\alpha,\beta} = (Dh_{\beta_1} \cdots Dh_{\beta_p}, Dh_{\alpha_1} \cdots Dh_{\alpha_p}) < +\infty$$
(3.40)

for all $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma, \beta = (\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p) \in \Gamma.$

Proof Since D is linear,

$$[D\pi_{n}(t)]^{p} = \sum_{\alpha_{1},\dots,\alpha_{p}=0}^{n} a_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots a_{\alpha_{p}}^{Dh}a_{1}^{(t)}\cdots Dh_{\alpha_{p}}^{(t)}$$
(3.41)

The rest of the proof is too similar to the proof of (3.12) to repeat here.

Lemma 3.10 Under the hypotheses of Lemma 3.9, the matrix $E_{n,p}^{\phi}$ is positive semidefinite.

<u>Proof</u> Follow the proof of Lemma 3.3 using (3.40) instead of (3.14).

Theorem 3.4 Under the hypotheses of Lemma 3.9, the trace of $E_{n,p}^{\phi}$ is given by

$$\operatorname{Trace}(\mathbf{E}_{n,p}^{\phi}) = \left\{ \| \mathbf{K}_{n}^{(\mathsf{D})}(\mathsf{t},\mathsf{t}) \|_{p}^{\phi} \right\}^{p}$$
(3.42)

where

$$K_{n}^{(D)}(t,s) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} Dh_{k}(t) \overline{Dh_{k}(s)}$$
(3.43)

Proof Follow the proof of Theorem 3.1.

<u>Corollary 3.11</u> Under the conditions of Theorem 3.4, for all $\pi_n \in P_n$, $\pi_n \neq 0$,

$$\frac{\|D\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} \leq \sqrt{\|K_{n}^{(D)}(t,t)\|_{p}^{\phi}}$$
(3.44)

Proof Follow the proof of Corollary 3.4.

As an aside, we note that Erdelyi [10, Section 10.6] states that Hahn [16] and Krall [20] proved that if $G = \{g_0, g_1, \ldots, g_n\}$ is an orthogonal system of polynomials, then G is a "classical" system if and only if the derivatives $\{g'_0, g'_1, \ldots, g'_n\}$ form an orthogonal system. The "classical" systems are defined here to comprise only the Jacobi, generalized Laguerre, and Hermite polynomials. Thus, if D is the derivative and G is a classical system, then (3.43) is related to a reproducing kernel of DP_n .

The next theorem generalizes Theorem 3.2 and does require a Nonnegativity Condition. This result is the main theorem of this chapter.

<u>Theorem 3.5</u> Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Let P_n be a subspace of $L_2^{\omega}[a,b] \cap L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ with a basis $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots, h_n\}$ which is orthonormal with respect to the inner product $(f,g)_{\omega}$. Let $D:P_n \ne L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ be a linear transformation such that $\{Dh_0, Dh_1, \ldots, Dh_n\}$ satisfy the Nonnegativity Condition in $L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$. Then, for all $0 \ne \pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\frac{\|D\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} \leq \max_{\substack{0 \leq k \leq n}} \sqrt{\|Dh_{k} \cdot DS_{n}\|_{p}^{\phi}}$$
(3.45)

where $S_n(t)$ is given by (3.22).

<u>Proof</u> The proof of (3.45) is, in its essential details, analogous to the proof of Theorem 3.2 and will not be given here. We note only that (3.24) is replaced by

$$0 < \int_{c}^{d} |DS_{n}(t)|^{p} \phi(t) dt < +\infty$$
 (3.46)

The next three corollaries are given without proof since their proofs so closely parallel the proofs of Corollaries 3.5 through 3.7.

Corollary 3.12 Under the conditions of Theorem 3.5

$$\frac{\|D\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} \leq \inf \sqrt{M_{rp}^{\phi} \|DS_{n}\|_{sp}^{\phi}} < +\infty$$
(3.47)

where

$$M_{rp}^{\phi} = \max_{0 \le k \le n} \|Dh_k\|_{rp}^{\phi}$$
(3.48)

and the infimum is taken over all extended real numbers $r \ge 1$ and $s \ge 1$ satisfying $\frac{1}{r} + \frac{1}{s} = 1$.

Corollary 3.13 Under the conditions of Theorem 3.5, for all $\pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\|D\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \leq \|DS_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$
(3.49)

and

$$\|D\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi} \leq \sqrt{n+1} M_{2p}^{\phi} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$
(3.50)

Corollary 3.14 Under the conditions of Theorem 3.5,

$$\frac{\|D\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}} \leq \left\{ M_{\infty}^{\phi} \|DS_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\phi} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \left\{ \frac{\|DS_{n}\|_{2}^{\phi}}{\|DS_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\phi}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{p}} , p \geq 2 \qquad (3.51)$$

provided the norms $\|Dh_0\|_{\infty}^{\phi}$, $\|Dh_1\|_{\infty}^{\phi}$, \cdots , $\|Dh_n\|_{\infty}^{\phi}$ are finite.

<u>Theorem 3.6</u> Let $p \ge 2$ be an integer. Let P_n be a subspace of $L_2^{\omega}[a,b] \cap L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ with a basis $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots, h_n\}$ which is orthonormal with respect to the inner product $(f,g)_{\omega}$. Let $D: P_n \neq L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ be a linear transformation such that $\{Dh_0, Dh_1, \ldots, Dh_n\}$ satisfy the Nonnegativity Condition in $L_{2k}^{\phi}[c,d]$, $k = 2, \ldots, p$. If $M_{\infty}^{\phi} < +\infty$, then for all $\pi_n \in P_n$, $\|D\pi_n\|_{2p}^{\phi} \le \left\{\sqrt{n+1} M_{\infty}^{\phi}\right\}^{1-\frac{1}{2p-1}} \left\{\frac{\|DS_n\|_2^{\phi}}{\sqrt{n+1}}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2p-1}} \|\pi_n\|_2^{\omega}$ (3.52)

and

$$\|D\pi_{n}\|_{2^{p}}^{\phi} \leq \left\{\|DS_{n}\|_{\infty}^{\phi}\right\}^{-\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \left\{M_{2}^{\phi}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2^{p-1}}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{\omega}$$
(3.53)

<u>Proof</u> Follow the proof of Theorem 3.3 replacing all references to Theorem 3.2 by references to Theorem 3.5.

We point out that the algebraic methods developed in this chapter can also be applied to the more general problem

$$\max_{\substack{0 \in \pi_n \in \mathcal{P}_n}} \left\{ \frac{\| (D_1 \pi_n) (D_2 \pi_n) \cdots (D_p \pi_n) \|_2^{\phi}}{(\| \pi_n \|_2^{\omega})^p} \right\}$$

where D_1, \ldots, D_p are different linear operators on P_n . Thus, if P_n are the algebraic polynomials of degree at most n, and $D_k \pi_n = \pi_n^{(k)}$ is the k-th derivative of π_n , and $\omega = \phi \equiv 1$, then we could obtain a bound for

$$\max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in \mathcal{P}_{n}}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_{n} \pi_{n}^{(1)} \pi_{n}^{(2)} \cdots \pi_{n}^{(p)} \|_{2}^{\omega}}{(\|\pi_{n} \|_{2}^{\omega})^{p}} \right\}$$

by following the proof of Theorem 3.2. [To see that the appropriate Nonnegativity Condition is satisfied for this ratio, refer to equations (4.38)-(4.41) and (4.53).]

D. Complex Polynomials Defined on the Unit Circle, Revisited

As mentioned earlier, all these results are easily translated into results for complex polynomials defined on the unit circle. The reason for this is simply that every integral appearing in this chapter can be replaced by contour integrals on the unit circle. Thus, using the notation of (2.1) and following the proof of Theorem 3.2 gives

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq \max_{0 \leq k \leq n} \sqrt{\|h_{k} S_{n}\|_{p}}$$
(3.54)

But $h_k(z) = z^k$ is the appropriate orthonormal basis satisfying the Nonnegativity Condition, so (3.54) is merely

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq \sqrt{\|1 + z + z^{2} + \cdots + z^{n}\|_{p}}$$
(3.55)

Since

$$\|s_{n}\|_{p} = (\lambda_{n,p})^{\frac{1}{p}}, \text{ if } p = 2, 4, 6, \dots, \\\|s_{n}\|_{p} > (\lambda_{n,p})^{\frac{1}{p}}, \text{ if } p = 1, 3, 5, \dots,$$

we see that (3.55) is almost the central result of Theorem 2.1. The cause of this deficiency is due entirely to the necessity of taking absolute values inside the integral in (3.26) in the proof of Theorem 3.2. Thus, an examination of (3.25) yields the essential inequality of Theorem 2.1, while (3.26) does not. The same phenomenon occurs in the proof of Theorem 3.5, which is easily modified to yield

<u>Theorem 3.7</u> Let P_n be the collection of all complex polynomials of degree at most n with norms given by equation (2.3). For all $\pi_n \in P_n$, let $\pi_n^{(k)}(z)$ denote the k-th derivaof π_n , $k = 1, 2, 3, \ldots$. Then, for all $\pi_n \in P_n$, $\pi_n \neq 0$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{(k)}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq \sqrt{n(n-1)\cdots(n-k+1)} \{\Lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}, p = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$
(3.56)

where $\Lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}$ is the largest coefficient in the power series expansion of

$$\left\{\frac{d^{k}}{dz^{k}}(1 + z + z^{2} + \cdots + z^{n})\right\}^{p}$$
(3.57)



<u>Proof</u> Follow the proof of Theorem 3.5 and consider the remarks immediately following (3.55).

Note that Theorem 3.7 is a more natural result than Theorem 2.5. The bound is, however, not as good, as the next corollary shows.

Corollary 3.15 With $\lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}$ defined via (2.87), and under the conditions of Theorem 3.7,

$$(k!)^{2p} \lambda_{n,p}^{(k)} \leq [n(n-1)\cdots(n-k+1)]^{p} \Lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}$$
(3.58)

<u>Proof</u> We only indicate the proof. As stated following Theorem 2.7, $(k!) {}^{2p} \lambda_{n,p}^{(k)}$ is precisely the spectral radius of the operator $M_{n,p}^{(k)}$. Since the bound (3.56) is an estimate of the spectral radius of $M_{n,p}^{(k)}$, we must have (3.58).

By example, it is seen that (3.58) can be strict. Let n = 4, p = 2, and k = 1. Then

$$\lambda_{n,p}^{(1)} = 288$$

while

$$\Lambda_{n,p}^{(1)} = 25$$

so that

 $(1!)^2 \lambda_{4,2}^{(1)} = 288 < 400 = 4^2 \Lambda_{4,2}^{(1)}$

Chapter IV

APPLICATIONS TO CLASSICAL ORTHOGONAL POLYNOMIALS

A. Jacobi Polynomials

The Nonnegativity Condition (3.20) is satisfied by nearly half the Jacobi polynomials, all the generalized Laguerre polynomials (properly normalized), and the Hermite polynomials. The Jacobi polynomials turn out to be significantly easier to handle by the methods of Chapter III because they are essentially bounded on (-1,+1). At the end of this chapter, some general results are quoted from Askey [3,4] which give some sufficient conditions for a given set of orthogonal polynomials to satisfy a Nonnegativity Condition.

Throughout this chapter, we will denote by P_n the collection of all polynomials of degree at most n, $n \ge 0$. We stress that these polynomials are allowed to have complex coefficients. The Gamma function $\Gamma(z)$ is defined as in Abramowitz and Stegun [1, Chapter 6] for all complex $z \ne \{0, -1, -2, \ldots\}$. We have the well known identity $\Gamma(1 + z) = z\Gamma(z)$. For integers $n \ge 0$, $\Gamma(1 + n) = n!$ Finally, the Pochhammer symbol is defined by

$$(z)_{n} = \begin{cases} z(z+1)\cdots(z+n-1), & n \ge 1 \\ 1, & n = 0 \end{cases}$$

for all complex $z \neq 0$, and the binomial coefficient

$$\binom{z}{u} = \frac{\Gamma(z+1)}{\Gamma(u+1)\Gamma(z-u+1)}$$

for all complex z and u such that z, u, and z - u are not negative integers.

Let $P_n^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x)$ be the n-th degree Jacobi polynomial of order (α,β) , $\alpha > -1$, $\beta > -1$, as defined by Szegö [31, Chapter IV]. The Jacobi polynomials satisfy the orthogonality relation

$$\int_{-1}^{1} (1-x)^{\alpha} (1+x)^{\beta} P_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x) P_{m}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x) dx = \frac{\delta_{n,m}}{\{h_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\}^{2}} (4.1)$$

where

$$h_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)} = \begin{cases} \left(\frac{\Gamma(\alpha+\beta+2)}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(\beta+1)}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}, & n = 0\\ \left(\frac{(2n+\alpha+\beta+1)\Gamma(n+\alpha+\beta+1)\Gamma(n+1)}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}\Gamma(n+\alpha+1)\Gamma(n+\beta+1)}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}, & n \ge 1 \end{cases}$$

$$(4.2).$$

Define

$$S_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x)$$
(4.3)

Define $g(k,m,n;\alpha,\beta)$ via the expansion

$$P_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x)P_{m}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n+m} g(k,m,n;\alpha,\beta)P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x) \quad (4.4)$$

The expansion (4.4) certainly exists and uniquely defines $g(k,m,n;\alpha,\beta)$. The question is, for which (α,β) is it true that

$$g(k,m,n;\alpha,\beta) \ge 0$$
 for all $k,m,n = 0, 1, 2, ... ?$
(4.5)

Miller [26] gives $g(k,m,n;\alpha,\beta)$ explicitly, but in a form that is not useful here. Gasper [14] found necessary and sufficient conditions for (α,β) to be such that (4.5) holds, but without exhibiting the coefficients explicitly. Part of his result proves that (4.5) holds for all $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$ satisfying $\alpha + \beta + 1 \ge 0$.

In another direction, Askey [4], following Szegö [31, Equation 9.4.1], gives

$$P_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} t(k;\alpha,\beta,\gamma) P_{k}^{(\gamma,\beta)}(x)$$
(4.6)

where $\gamma \ge 0$ and

 $t(k;\alpha,\beta,\gamma)$

$$= (2k+\gamma+\beta+1)\frac{\Gamma(n+k+\alpha+\beta+1)\Gamma(n-k+\alpha-\gamma)\Gamma(k+\gamma+\beta+1)\Gamma(n+\beta+1)}{\Gamma(n+k+\gamma+\beta+2)\Gamma(n-k+1)\Gamma(k+\beta+1)\Gamma(\alpha-\gamma)\Gamma(n+\beta+\alpha+1)}$$
(4.7)

An examination shows that for $\beta > -1$ and $\alpha > \gamma \ge 0$, the coefficients in the expansion (4.6) are all positive.

Lemma 4.1 Let $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$ and $\alpha + \beta + 1 \ge 0$. The polynomials

$$\{P_0^{(\alpha,\beta)}(\mathbf{x}), P_1^{(\alpha,\beta)}(\mathbf{x}), \cdots, P_n^{(\alpha,\beta)}(\mathbf{x})\}$$
(4.8)

satisfy the Nonnegativity Condition (3.20) in the space L_{2p}^{ω} [-1,+1], where

$$\omega(x) = (1 - x)^{\alpha} (1 + x)^{\beta}$$
(4.9)

If in addition $\alpha > 0$, then the polynomials (4.8) satisfy the Nonnegativity Condition in every space $L_{2p}^{\phi}[-1,+1]$, where

 $\phi(\mathbf{x}) = (1 - \mathbf{x})^{\gamma} (1 + \mathbf{x})^{\beta}, \quad 0 \le \gamma < \alpha$ (4.10)

<u>Proof</u> Gasper [14] proves that with these conditions on α and β , (4.5) always holds. Let $(i_1, \ldots, i_p) \in \Gamma$ and $(j_1, \ldots, j_p) \in \Gamma$. Then (4.5) implies that the expansions

$$F(\mathbf{x}) \equiv P_{i_{1}}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(\mathbf{x}) \cdots P_{i_{p}}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{i=0}^{i_{1}+\cdots+i_{p}} a_{i_{p}}P_{i_{p}}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(\mathbf{x})$$

$$G(\mathbf{x}) \equiv P_{j_{1}}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(\mathbf{x}) \cdots P_{j_{p}}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{j=0}^{j_{1}+\cdots+j_{p}} b_{j_{p}}P_{j_{p}}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(\mathbf{x})$$

have $a_i \ge 0$ and $b_j \ge 0$ for all i and j. Thus, using the orthogonality conditions

$$\int_{-1}^{1} (1 - x)^{\alpha} (1 + x)^{\beta} F(x) G(x) dx$$

= $\sum_{i,j} a_{i} b_{j} \int_{-1}^{1} (1 - x)^{\alpha} (1 + x)^{\beta} P_{i}^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) P_{j}^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) dx$
= $\sum_{i,j} \left[a_{i} b_{j} \delta_{i,j} / h_{i}^{(\alpha, \beta)} h_{j}^{(\alpha, \beta)} \right] \ge 0$

which proves that the polynomials (4.8) satisfy the Nonnegativity Condition in L_{2p}^{ω} [-1,+1]. For $\alpha > \gamma \ge 0$, the expansion (4.6) holds, so that

$$\int_{-1}^{1} (1 - x)^{\gamma} (1 + x)^{\beta} F(x) G(x) dx$$

= $\sum_{i,j}^{n} a_{i} b_{j} \int_{-1}^{1} (1 - x)^{\gamma} (1 + x)^{\beta} P_{i}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x) P_{j}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x) dx$
= $\sum_{i,j}^{n} a_{i} b_{j} \int_{-1}^{1} (1 - x)^{\gamma} (1 + x)^{\beta} \left(\sum_{k=0}^{i} t(k; \alpha, \beta, \gamma) P_{k}^{(\gamma,\beta)}(x) \right)$
 $\cdot \left(\sum_{r=0}^{j} t(r; \alpha, \beta, \gamma) P_{r}^{(\gamma,\beta)}(x) \right) dx$

$$= \sum_{i,j}^{a} \sum_{k,r} \left[t(k;\alpha,\beta,\gamma) t(r;\alpha,\beta,\gamma) \delta_{k,r} / h_{k}^{(\gamma,\beta)} h_{r}^{(\gamma,\beta)} \right]$$

$$\geq 0$$

This concludes the proof.

For all
$$\pi_n \in {}^p_n$$
, we adopt the notation

$$\|\pi_n\|_p^{(\alpha,\beta)} = \left\{ \int_{-1}^1 (1-x)^{\alpha} (1+x)^{\beta} |\pi_n(x)|^p dx \right\}^{\frac{1}{p}}, 1 \le p < \infty$$
(4.11)

where $\alpha > -1$, $\beta > -1$.

<u>Theorem 4.1</u> Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Let $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$ and $\alpha + \beta + 1 \ge 0$. Then, for all $0 \ne \pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\alpha,\beta)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)}} \leq \max_{0 \leq k \leq n} \sqrt{h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} s_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|_{p}^{(\alpha,\beta)}}$$
(4.12)

Alternatively, if $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$ and $\alpha > 0$, then

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\gamma,\beta)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)}} \leq \max_{0 \leq k \leq n} \sqrt{h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}s_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|P_{k}^{(\gamma,\beta)}}$$
(4.13)

provided only $0 \leq \gamma < \alpha$.

<u>Proof</u> The polynomials $\{h_k^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_k^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x)\}$ form an orthonormal basis on (-1,+1) with respect to the weight function $(1-x)^{\alpha}(1+x)^{\beta}$. Lemma 4.1 shows that they satisfy the Nonnegativity Conditions needed in order to apply Theorem 3.2 directly. This completes the proof.

Lemma 4.2 Let $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$ and $\alpha \ge 0$. For all $\gamma > -1$ and $\delta > -1$,

$$\max_{\substack{0 \le k \le n}} \|h_k^{(\alpha,\beta)} P_k^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|_{\infty}^{(\gamma,\delta)} = h_n^{(\alpha,\beta)} {n+\alpha \choose n}, n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$$
(4.14)

Furthermore,

$$h_n^{(\alpha,\beta)} {n+\alpha \choose n} < M\left(n + \frac{\alpha+\beta+1}{2}\right)^{\alpha+\frac{1}{2}}, n = 0, 1, 2, \dots (4.15)$$

where

$$M = \left\{ \frac{1}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}\Gamma(1+\alpha)} \max\left(\frac{\Gamma(\alpha+\beta+2)}{\Gamma(1+\beta)}, \frac{2e^{C}}{\Gamma(1+\alpha)}\left[\frac{(1+\alpha)(1+\alpha+\beta)}{1+\beta}\right]^{\alpha+\frac{1}{2}}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$C = \frac{1}{12} \left[\frac{1}{1+\alpha+\beta} + \frac{1}{1+\alpha} \right]$$

$$\frac{\text{Proof}}{\text{From Szegö [31, Equation 7.32.2], since } \alpha \ge \beta,$$

$$\max_{\substack{k=1 \le k \le 1}} \left| P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(\mathbf{x}) \right| = P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(1) = \binom{k+\alpha}{k}, k = 0, 1, 2, \dots$$

$$(4.17)$$

Now, (4.2) and the fact that the supremum norm of a polynomial is independent of (γ, δ) in this case, implies

$$\|h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|_{\infty}^{(\gamma,\delta)} = h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(1), k \ge 0$$
$$= \frac{1}{\Gamma(1+\alpha)} \left\{ \frac{2k+\alpha+\beta+1}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}} \frac{\Gamma(k+\alpha+\beta+1)}{\Gamma(k+\beta+1)} \frac{\Gamma(k+\alpha+1)}{\Gamma(k+1)} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}, k \ge 1 \quad (4.18)$$

Since for all x > y > 0

$$\frac{\Gamma(1+x)}{\Gamma(1+y)} = \frac{x}{y} \frac{\Gamma(x)}{\Gamma(y)} > \frac{\Gamma(x)}{\Gamma(y)}$$
(4.19)

(4.18) implies

$$h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(1) < h_{k+1}^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_{k+1}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(1), k = 1, 2, 3, ...$$
(4.20)

By inspection, (4.20) is seen to hold for k = 0 as well, and this proves (4.14). Now, one form of Stirling's approximation [1, equation 6.1.38] is

$$\Gamma(1+x) = \sqrt{2\pi} x^{x+\frac{1}{2}} \exp\left(-x + \frac{\theta(x)}{12x}\right), \quad 0 < \theta(x) < 1, \quad x > 0$$
(4.21)

Hence, for $x \ge y > -1$, $x \ge 0$,

$$\frac{\Gamma(n+x+1)}{\Gamma(n+y+1)} < \frac{(n+x)}{(n+y)} + \frac{1}{2} \exp\left(y - x + \frac{1}{12(n+x)}\right), \quad n \ge 1$$

$$= (n+y)^{x-y} \left(1 + \frac{x-y}{n+y}\right)^{n+x+\frac{1}{2}} \exp\left(y - x + \frac{1}{12(n+x)}\right), \quad n \ge 1$$

$$< \left(\frac{1+x}{1+y}\right)^{x-y+\frac{1}{2}} (n+y)^{x-y} \exp\left(\frac{1}{12(1+x)}\right), \quad n \ge 1 \quad (4.22)$$

Therefore, from (4.18), for $n \ge 1$,

$$h_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\binom{n+\alpha}{n} < \left\{ \frac{e^{C}}{\Gamma^{2}(1+\alpha)} \frac{2n+\alpha+\beta+1}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}} (n+\beta)^{\alpha} n^{\alpha} \left[\frac{(1+\alpha)(1+\alpha+\beta)}{1+\beta} \right]^{\alpha+\frac{1}{2}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

which proves (4.15) for $n \ge 1$ since $(\alpha+\beta+1)/2 \ge \max\{0,\beta\}$. The proof of 4.15 is completed by examination of the case n = 0.

Corollary 4.3 Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Let $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$ and $\alpha \ge 0$. Then for all $\pi_n \in P_n$, $\pi_n \ne 0$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\gamma,\beta)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)}} \leq \sqrt{h_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\binom{n+\alpha}{n}\|s_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|_{p}^{(\gamma,\beta)}}$$
(4.23)

for all γ satisfying $0 \leq \gamma \leq \alpha$.

<u>Proof</u> Follows from (4.14) and Corollary 3.5 with $r = \infty$ and s = 1.

Corollary 4.4 Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Let $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$ and $\alpha \ge 0$. Then for all $\pi_n \in P_n$, $\pi_n \ne 0$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{4}^{(\alpha,\beta)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)}} \leq \sqrt{\sqrt{n+1} h_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \binom{n+\alpha}{n}}$$

$$(4.24)$$

<u>Proof</u> Use Corollary 4.3 with $\gamma = \alpha$ and the fact that $\|s_n^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|_2^{(\alpha,\beta)} = \sqrt{n+1}$

Theorem 4.2 Let $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$ and $\alpha \ge 0$. Then, for all $\pi_n \in P_n, \pi_n \neq 0$,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\alpha,\beta)} < A\left[n + \frac{\alpha+\beta+3}{2}\right]^{B} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)}, p = 1, 2, \dots (4.25)$$

where

$$A = \sqrt{\alpha + \frac{3}{2}} \left(\frac{M}{\alpha + \frac{3}{2}} \right)^{1 - \frac{1}{p}}$$
$$B = (1 + \alpha) (1 - \frac{1}{p})$$

and M is given by (4.16). Furthermore, for all $n \ge 0$,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{\infty}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \leq \left(\frac{M}{\sqrt{2\alpha+2}}\right) \left(n + \frac{\alpha+\beta+3}{2}\right)^{1+\alpha} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)}$$
(4.26)

and the exponent $1+\alpha$ in (4.26) cannot be replaced by a smaller number.

<u>Proof</u> The case p = 1 is trivial. For $p \ge 2$, use Corollary 3.7. In view of Lemma 4.2,

$$\|S_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|_{\infty}^{(\alpha,\beta)} = \sum_{k=0}^{n} h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} {k+\alpha \choose k}$$

$$< M \sum_{k=0}^{n} (k+a)^{\alpha+\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$< M \int_{0}^{n+1} (k+a)^{\alpha+\frac{1}{2}} dk$$

$$< \frac{M}{\alpha+\frac{3}{2}} (n+a+1)^{\alpha+\frac{3}{2}}$$

where $a = (\alpha + \beta + 1)/2$. Therefore, from (3.32),

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\alpha,\beta)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)}} \leq \left\{ M(n+a)^{\alpha+\frac{1}{2}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \left\{ \frac{M}{\alpha+\frac{3}{2}} (n+a+1)^{\alpha+\frac{3}{2}} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{p}} \left\{ \sqrt{n+1} \right\}^{\frac{1}{p}} \\ < \frac{1-\frac{1}{p}}{(\alpha+\frac{3}{2})^{\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{p}}} (n+a+1)^{B}$$

where

$$B = \frac{1}{2}(\alpha + \frac{1}{2}) + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{p})(\alpha + \frac{3}{2}) + \frac{1}{2p}$$
$$= (\alpha + 1)(1 - \frac{1}{p})$$

which proves (4.25). To prove (4.26), let

$$\pi_{n}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} a_{k} h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x)$$
(4.27)

Then

$$\|\pi_n\|_{\infty}^{(\alpha,\beta)} = \left|a_0h_0^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_0^{(\alpha,\beta)}(z) + \cdots + a_nh_n^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_n^{(\alpha,\beta)}(z)\right|,$$

some $z \in [-1,1]$
$$\leq \left\{ \sum_{k=0}^{n} |a_{k}|^{2} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \left\{ \sum_{k=0}^{n} |h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} p_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} (z)|^{2} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$\leq \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \left\{ \sum_{k=0}^{n} \left[h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} {k \choose k} \right]^{2} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$\leq M \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \left\{ \sum_{k=0}^{n} \left[k + \frac{\alpha+\beta+1}{2} \right]^{2\alpha+1} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}, \text{ using (4.15)}$$

$$\leq M \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \left\{ \left[n + \frac{\alpha+\beta+3}{2} \right]^{2\alpha+2} / (2\alpha+2) \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

Simplifying the last inequality proves (4.26). Finally, the claim that $1 + \alpha$ cannot be replaced by any smaller exponent follows from examining the polynomial (4.27) with

$$a_k = h_k^{(\alpha,\beta)} P_k^{(\alpha,\beta)}(1), \quad k = 0, 1, ..., n$$

Then proceeding as before, we see that

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{\infty}^{(\alpha,\beta)} = \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \left\{ \sum_{k=0}^{n} \left[h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} {k+\alpha \choose k}\right]^{2} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$
(4.28)

Now, the proof of (4.22) can be altered to give a lower bound, which when applied to the quantity in brackets in (4.28) gives

$$h_k^{(\alpha,\beta)}\binom{k+\alpha}{k} > \tilde{M}(k-1)^{\alpha+\frac{1}{2}}, \quad k = 1, 2, \ldots$$

for some constant \tilde{M} independent of k. Then

$$\begin{cases} \sum_{k=0}^{n} \left[h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \binom{k+\alpha}{k} \right]^{2} \end{bmatrix}^{\frac{1}{2}} > \widetilde{M} \begin{cases} \sum_{k=2}^{n} (k-1)^{2\alpha+1} \end{bmatrix}^{\frac{1}{2}} \\ > \widetilde{M} \begin{cases} \int_{k=1}^{n} k^{2\alpha+1} dk \end{cases}^{\frac{1}{2}} \end{cases}$$

>
$$\tilde{M}\{n^{2\alpha+2} - 1\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \ge \tilde{M}(n - 1)^{1+\alpha}, n \ge 1$$

This completes the proof.

We remark that Theorem 3.3 can be applied in the above situation for L_{2P}^{ϕ} norms. If this is done, the same result as (4.25) is obtained. Therefore, Corollary 3.7 is actually more general than Theorem 3.3. Similarly, it will be seen (Theorem 4.4) that Corollary 3.14 is more general than Theorem 3.6 in some situations.

<u>Theorem 4.3</u> Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Let $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$. For each integer $m \ge 1$, define the operator D^m on P_n by

$$D^{m}f(x) = \frac{d^{m}}{dx^{m}}f(x), \qquad f \in P_{n}$$

Then, for all $\pi_n \in \mathcal{P}_n, \ \pi_n \neq 0$,

$$\frac{\|D^{m}\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\alpha+m,\beta+m)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)}} \leq \max_{\substack{0 \leq k \leq n}} \sqrt{\frac{h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|D^{m}P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}D^{m}S_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|_{p}^{(\alpha+m,\beta+m)}}$$
(4.29)

Proof Szegö [31, Equation 4.21.7] shows that

$$D^{m}P_{n}^{(\alpha,\beta)}(x) = \frac{1}{2^{m}}(n + \alpha + \beta + 1)_{m}P_{n-m}^{(\alpha+m,\beta+m)}(x) \quad (4.30)$$

so that the functions $\{D^m P_0, D^m P_1, \cdots, D^m P_n\}$ satisfy the Nonnegativity Condition in $L_{2p}^{\phi}[-1,+1]$, where $\phi(x)$ = $(1-x)^{\alpha+m}(1+x)^{\beta+m}$, by Lemma 4.1, since $\alpha+m \ge \beta+m > -1$ and $(\alpha+m) + (\beta+m) + 1 \ge 0$, for $m = 1, 2, 3, \ldots$, and for all $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$. Apply Theorem 3.5 directly.

Theorem 4.4 Let $\alpha \ge \beta > -1$ and $\alpha \ge 0$. Then, for all $\pi_n \in P_n, \pi_n \neq 0$,

 $\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{2p}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} < A(n+\alpha+\beta+2)^{B}\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)}, p = 2, 3, \dots (4.31)$

where

so that

$$A = \sqrt{\frac{\alpha + \frac{7}{2}}{3}} \left\{ \frac{\sqrt{3} M}{2(\alpha + 1)(\alpha + \frac{7}{2})} \right\}^{1 - \frac{1}{p}}$$
$$B = (1 + \alpha)(1 - \frac{1}{p}) + 2 - \frac{1}{p}$$

and M is given by (4.16). Furthermore,

$$\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{\infty}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} \leq \frac{M}{2\sqrt{2}(\alpha+1)\sqrt{\alpha+3}}(n+\alpha+\beta+2)^{\alpha+3}\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \quad (4.32)$$

and the exponent $3+\alpha$ in (4.32) cannot be replaced by a smaller number.

<u>Proof</u> We will use Corollary 3.14. From (4.17) and (4.30), for $k \ge 1$,

$$\|h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_{k}^{\prime}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|_{\infty}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} = \frac{k+\alpha+\beta+1}{2} h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_{k-1}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} (1)$$

$$= \frac{k(k+\alpha+\beta+1)}{2(\alpha+1)} h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} {k+\alpha \choose k}$$
(4.33)

$$M_{\infty}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} = \max_{0 \le k \le n} \|h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} P_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}\|_{\infty}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)}$$

$$< \frac{M}{2(\alpha+1)} (n+\alpha+\beta+1)^{\alpha+\frac{5}{2}}$$

$$(4.34)$$

from Lemma 4.2. Now, (4.33) implies also

$$\|S_{n}^{\prime}(\alpha,\beta)\|_{\infty}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} < \frac{M}{2(\alpha+1)} \sum_{k=0}^{n} (k+\alpha+\beta+1)^{\alpha+\frac{5}{2}} < \frac{M}{2(\alpha+1)(\alpha+\frac{7}{2})} (n+\alpha+\beta+2)^{\alpha+\frac{7}{2}}$$
(4.35)

Next,

$$\begin{split} \|S_{n}^{*}(\alpha,\beta)\|_{2}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} \\ &= \left\|\sum_{k=0}^{n} h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} P_{k}^{*}(\alpha,\beta)\right\|_{2}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} \\ &= \left\|\sum_{k=1}^{n} \frac{k+\alpha+\beta+1}{2} h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} P_{k-1}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)}\right\|_{2}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} \\ &= \left\|\sum_{k=1}^{n} \frac{k+\alpha+\beta+1}{2} \frac{h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}}{h_{k-1}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)}} h_{k-1}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} \right\|_{2}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} \\ &\quad \cdot p_{k-1}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} \left\| \alpha+1,\beta+1 \right\|_{2}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)} \\ &= \left\{\sum_{k=1}^{n} \left[\frac{k+\alpha+\beta+1}{2} \frac{h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}}{h_{k-1}^{(\alpha+1,\beta+1)}}\right]^{2}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \\ &= \left\{\sum_{k=1}^{n} \left[\frac{k+\alpha+\beta+1}{2}\right]^{2} \left[\frac{(2k+\alpha+\beta+1)\Gamma(k+\alpha+\beta+1)\Gamma(k+1)}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}\Gamma(k+\alpha+1)\Gamma(k+\beta+1)} \\ &\quad \cdot \frac{2^{\alpha+\beta+3}\Gamma(k+\alpha+1)\Gamma(k+\alpha+\beta+1)\Gamma(k)}{(2k+\alpha+\beta+1)\Gamma(k+\alpha+\beta+2)\Gamma(k)}\right]\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \\ &= \left\{\sum_{k=1}^{n} \left(\frac{k+\alpha+\beta+1}{2}\right)^{2} \frac{4k}{k+\alpha+\beta+1}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \\ &= \left\{\sum_{k=1}^{n} (k+\alpha+\beta+1)^{2}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \end{split}$$

$$< \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}} (n+\alpha+\beta+2)^{\frac{3}{2}}$$
 (4.36)

Applying (4.34) - (4.36) in (3.51) proves (4.31). To prove (4.32), let π_n be as in (4.27). Then

$$\begin{aligned} \|\pi_{n}^{*}\|_{\infty} &= \left\|\sum_{k=0}^{n} a_{k}h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_{k}^{*}(\alpha,\beta)(z)\right|, \text{ some } z \in [-1,+1] \\ &\leq \left\{\sum_{k=0}^{n} |a_{k}|^{2}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \left\{\sum_{k=0}^{n} |h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)}P_{k}^{*}(\alpha,\beta)(z)|^{2}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \\ &\leq \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \left\{\sum_{k=0}^{n} \left[h_{k}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \frac{k(k+\alpha+\beta+1)}{2(\alpha+1)}\binom{k+\alpha}{k}\right]^{2}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \\ &\leq \frac{M}{2(\alpha+1)} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \left\{\sum_{k=0}^{n} (n+\alpha+\beta+1)^{2\alpha+5}\right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \\ &\leq \frac{M}{2(\alpha+1)} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha,\beta)} \frac{(n+\alpha+\beta+2)^{\alpha+3}}{\sqrt{2\alpha+6}} \end{aligned}$$

which proves (4.32). That the exponent $3+\alpha$ is best possible can be proved in the same manner as the analogous result in Theorem 4.2, by consideration of the polynomial π_n given by

$$a_k = h_k^{(\alpha,\beta)} P_k^{(\alpha,\beta)} (1), \quad k = 0, 1, \ldots$$

in (4.27). This completes the proof.

B. Gegenbauer (Ultraspherical) Polynomials

Even more can be said for the Gegenbauer, or Ultraspherical, polynomials. These polynomials are defined (see Szegö [31, p. 80]) for $v > -\frac{1}{2}$, $v \neq 0$, by

$$P_{n}^{(\nu)}(x) = \frac{\Gamma(\nu + \frac{1}{2})}{\Gamma(2\nu)} \frac{\Gamma(n + 2\nu)}{\Gamma(n + \nu + \frac{1}{2})} P_{n}^{(\nu - \frac{1}{2}, \nu - \frac{1}{2})}(x)$$
(4.37)

Vilenkin gives [33, p. 491] the expansion

$$P_{n}^{(v)}(x)P_{m}^{(v)}(x) = \sum_{k \in K} s(k,m,n;v)P_{k}^{(v)}(x)$$
(4.38)

where $K = \{ |n-m|, |n-m| + 2, ..., n+m-2, n+m \}$, 2r = n+m+k, and

$$s(k,m,n;v) = \frac{k+v}{r+v} \frac{\Gamma(r-n+v)\Gamma(r-m+v)\Gamma(r-k+v)\Gamma(k+1)\Gamma(r+2v)}{\Gamma(r-n+1)\Gamma(r-m+1)\Gamma(r-k+1)\Gamma^{2}(v)\Gamma(k+2v)}$$
(4.39)

Also, Szegö [31, Equations 4.10.27-8] states that Gegenbauer proved that

$$P_{n}^{(\nu)}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{[n/2]} a(k,n;\mu,\nu) P_{n-2k}^{(\mu)}(x)$$
(4.40)

where $v > \mu > 0$ and

$$\mathbf{a}(\mathbf{k},\mathbf{n};\boldsymbol{\mu},\boldsymbol{\nu}) = \frac{(\mathbf{n}-2\mathbf{k}+\boldsymbol{\mu})\Gamma(\boldsymbol{\mu})\Gamma(\mathbf{k}+\boldsymbol{\nu}-\boldsymbol{\mu})\Gamma(\mathbf{n}-\mathbf{k}+\boldsymbol{\nu})}{\mathbf{k}! \Gamma(\boldsymbol{\nu})\Gamma(\boldsymbol{\nu}-\boldsymbol{\mu})\Gamma(\mathbf{n}-\mathbf{k}+\boldsymbol{\mu}+1)}$$
(4.41)

Therefore,

$$a(k,n;\mu,\nu) > 0, \nu > \mu > 0$$
 (4.42)

Lemma 4.5 Let v > 0. The Gegenbauer polynomials

$$\{P_{0}^{(v)}(x), P_{1}^{(v)}(x), \dots, P_{n}^{(v)}(x)\}$$
(4.43)

satisfy the Nonnegativity Condition in every space L_{2p}^{ϕ} [-1,+1], where p = 1, 2, ..., and

$$\phi(\mathbf{x}) = (1 - \mathbf{x}^2)^{\mu - \frac{1}{2}}, \quad 0 < \mu \leq \nu$$
 (4.44)

<u>Proof</u> The nonnegativity of the coefficients in (4.38) shows that (4.43) satisfies the Nonnegativity Condition in L_{2p}^{ω} [-1,1], where $\omega(x) = (1 - x^2)^{\nu - \frac{1}{2}}$ for $\nu > 0$. The nonnegativity of the coefficients in the expansion (4.40) completes

the proof.

Note that the expansions (4.40) and (4.6) are quite different in nature, so Lemma 4.5 gives new information, except in the case $\mu = v$.

Define, for v > 0,

$$h_{n}^{(v)} = \Gamma(v) \left\{ \frac{2^{2v-1} (n+v) \Gamma(n+1)}{\pi \Gamma(n+2v)} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}, n \ge 0$$
 (4.45)

Then the functions $\{h_k^{(\nu)}P_k^{(\nu)}(x)\}, k = 0, 1, ..., n \text{ form an orthonormal set on (-1,+1) with respect to <math>(1 - x^2)^{\nu - \frac{1}{2}}$ (see [31, Section 4.7]). Define

$$S_{n}^{(v)}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} h_{k}^{(v)} P_{k}^{(v)}(x)$$
(4.46)

For all $\pi_n \in P_n$, we adopt the notation

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{p}^{(\nu)} = \left\{\int_{-1}^{1} (1-x^{2})^{\nu-\frac{1}{2}} |\pi_{n}(x)|^{p} dx\right\}^{\frac{1}{p}}, 1 \le p < \infty (4.47)$$

where v > 0. Note that (4.47) is a special case of (4.11).

Theorem 4.5 Let v > 0. Then, for all $0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\mu)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\nu)}} \leq \max_{0 \leq k \leq n} \sqrt{h_{k}^{(\nu)} \|P_{k}^{(\nu)} S_{n}^{(\nu)}\|_{p}^{(\mu)}}, p = 1, 2, ... (4.48)$$

for all $0 < \mu \leq \nu$.

Proof Use Theorem 3.5 in light of Lemma 4.5.

Corollary 4.6 For all $0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n$, and for $0 < \mu \leq v$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\mu)}}{\|n\|_{2}^{(\nu)}} \leq \sqrt{h_{n}^{(\nu)} \binom{n+2\nu-1}{n} \|S_{n}^{(\nu)}\|_{p}^{(\mu)}}$$
(4.49)

Proof With $r = \infty$ and s = 1 in Corollary 3.12, we have

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\mu)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\nu)}} \leq \max_{0 \leq k \leq n} \sqrt{\|h_{k}^{(\nu)}P_{k}^{(\nu)}\|_{\infty}^{(\mu)}\|s_{n}^{(\nu)}\|_{p}^{(\mu)}}$$
(4.50)

Szegö [31, Equation 7.33.1] gives, for v > 0,

$$\max_{1 \le k \le +1} |P_k^{(v)}(x)| = P_k^{(v)}(1) = {\binom{k+2\nu-1}{k}}, \ k \ge 0$$
(4.51)

Therefore, considering (4.19),

$$\|h_{k}^{(\nu)}P_{k}^{(\nu)}\|_{\infty}^{(\mu)} = h_{k}^{(\nu)} {\binom{k+2\nu-1}{k}}, \quad k \ge 0$$

$$= \frac{\Gamma(\nu)}{\Gamma(2\nu)} \left\{ \frac{2^{2\nu-1}(k+\nu)\Gamma(k+2\nu)}{\pi\Gamma(k+1)} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$= \frac{\Gamma(\nu)}{\Gamma(2\nu)} \left\{ \frac{2^{2\nu-1}}{\pi} \frac{k+\nu}{k+2\nu} \frac{\Gamma(k+2\nu+1)}{\Gamma(k+1)} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$< \|h_{k+1}^{(\nu)}P_{k+1}^{(\nu)}\|_{\infty}^{(\mu)}, \quad k = 0, 1, 2, \dots (4.52)$$

This completes the proof.

We remark that Corollary 4.6 is not a special case of Corollary 4.3.

From Szegö [31, Equation 4.7.14],

$$D^{m}P_{n}^{(\nu)}(x) = 2^{m}(\nu)_{m}P_{n-m}^{(\nu+m)}(x)$$
(4.53)

so that from Lemma 4.5, the polynomials

$$\{ D^{m} P_{0}^{(v)}(x), D^{m} P_{1}^{(v)}(x), \dots, D^{m} P_{n}^{(v)}(x) \}$$

satisfy the Nonnegativity Condition in all spaces $L_{2p}^{\phi}[-1,+1]$, where $\phi(t) = (1 - x^2)^{\mu}$, $0 < \mu \le v+m$. Therefore, we have a result which is much stronger than Theorem 4.3. <u>Theorem 4.6</u> Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Let v > 0. Define the operators D^m on P'_n as in Theorem 4.3. Then, for all $\pi_n \in P_n$, $\pi_n \ne 0$,

$$\frac{\|D^{m}\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\mu)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\nu)}} \leq \max_{0 \leq k \leq n} \sqrt{h_{k}^{(\nu)}\|D^{m}P_{k}^{(\nu)} \cdot D^{m}S_{n}^{(\nu)}\|_{p}^{(\mu)}}$$
(4.54)

for all $0 < \mu \leq \nu + m$.

Proof Use Theorem 3.5 together with (4.53)

<u>Theorem 4.7</u> Let $v \ge \frac{1}{2}$. Then for all $\pi_n \in P_n, \pi_n \neq 0$, $\|\pi_n'\|_{2p}^{(v)} < A(n+2v+1)^B \|\pi_n\|_2^{(v)}, p = 2, 3, 4, \dots$ (4.55)

where

$$A = \sqrt{\nu+3} \left(\frac{Q}{\nu+3}\right)^{1-\frac{1}{p}} \left(\frac{8}{3}\sqrt{\frac{2}{5}}\right)^{\frac{1}{p}}$$
$$B = \left(\nu+\frac{1}{2}\right) \left(1-\frac{1}{p}\right) + 2$$

and

$$Q = \frac{2^{-\frac{1}{4}}(\nu + \frac{1}{2})^{\nu - \frac{3}{4}} \exp\left(\frac{1}{12(1+2\nu)}\right)}{\Gamma\left(\nu + \frac{1}{2}\right)}$$
(4.56)

Furthermore,

$$\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{\infty}^{(\nu)} \leq \frac{M}{(2\nu+1)\sqrt{2\nu+5}} (n+2\nu+1)^{\nu+\frac{5}{2}} \|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\nu)}$$
(4.57)

where the constant M is given by setting $\alpha = \beta = v - \frac{1}{2}$ in (4.16), and the exponent $v + \frac{5}{2}$ in (4.57) cannot be replaced by a smaller number. Proof We will use Corollary 3.14. We have

$$\mathbf{M}_{\infty}^{(\vee)} = \max_{0 \le k \le n} \|\mathbf{h}_{k}^{(\vee)} \mathbf{P}_{k}^{(\vee)}\|_{\infty}^{(\vee)}$$

$$= \max_{\substack{1 \le k \le n}} 2 \nu h_{k}^{(\nu)} P_{k-1}^{(\nu+1)} (1)$$

$$= \max_{\substack{1 \le k \le n}} \left\{ 2 \nu \Gamma(\nu) \left[\frac{2^{2\nu-1} (k+\nu) \Gamma(k+1)}{\pi \Gamma(k+2\nu)} \right]^{\frac{1}{2}} {\binom{k+2\nu}{k-1}} \right\}$$

$$= \max_{\substack{1 \le k \le n}} \left\{ \frac{2 \nu \Gamma(\nu)}{\Gamma(2\nu+2)} \left[\frac{2^{2\nu-1}}{\pi} \frac{k (k+\nu) (k+2\nu) \Gamma(k+2\nu+1)}{\Gamma(k)} \right]^{\frac{1}{2}} \right\}$$

$$= \frac{\nu + \frac{1}{2}}{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma(2\nu+2)} \left[\frac{n^{2} (n+\nu) (n+2\nu) \Gamma(n+2\nu+1)}{\Gamma(n+1)} \right]^{\frac{1}{2}} (4.58)$$

From (4.22), we get

$$\frac{\Gamma(n+2\nu+1)}{\Gamma(n+1)} < (1+2\nu)^{2\nu+\frac{1}{2}} n^{2\nu} \exp(\frac{1}{12(1+2\nu)}), n \ge 1 \quad (4.59)$$

and so

$$M_{\infty}^{(v)} < Q(n+2v)^{v+2}$$
 (4.60)

where, in simplifying Q, we have used the duplication formula for the Gamma function [1, Equation 6.1.18]

$$\Gamma(2z) = (2\pi)^{-\frac{1}{2}} 2^{2z-\frac{1}{2}} \Gamma(z)\Gamma(z + \frac{1}{2})$$

Now, (4.58) and (4.59) show that

$$\|S_{n}^{(\nu)}\|_{\infty}^{(\nu)} = 2\nu \|\sum_{k=1}^{n} h_{k}^{(\nu)} P_{k-1}^{(\nu+1)}\|_{\infty}^{(\nu)}$$

= $2\nu \sum_{k=1}^{n} h_{k}^{(\nu)} P_{k-1}^{(\nu+1)} (1)$
< $Q \sum_{k=1}^{n} (k+2\nu)^{\nu+2}$
< $\frac{Q}{\nu+3} (n+2\nu+1)^{\nu+3}$ (4.61)

115

Finally, recalling the expansion (4.40), we have

$$\|S_{n}^{(\nu)}\|_{2}^{(\nu)} = 2\nu \|\sum_{k=1}^{n} h_{k}^{(\nu)} P_{k-1}^{(\nu+1)}\|_{2}^{(\nu)}$$

$$= 2 \|\sum_{k=1}^{n} h_{k}^{(\nu)} \sum_{t=0}^{\left\lfloor \frac{k-1}{2} \right\rfloor} (k-2t+\nu-1) P_{k-2t-1}^{(\nu)}\|_{2}^{(\nu)}$$

$$= 2 \|\sum_{s=1}^{n} \left\{ \sum_{k-2t=s}^{\left\lfloor \frac{k-2t+\nu-1}{k} \right\rfloor} h_{k}^{(\nu)} \right\} P_{s-1}^{(\nu)}\|_{2}^{(\nu)}$$

$$= 2 \left[\sum_{s=1}^{n} \left\{ \frac{s+\nu-1}{h_{s-1}^{(\nu)}} \sum_{k-2t=s}^{\left\lfloor \frac{k-2t+\nu}{k} \right\rfloor} h_{k}^{(\nu)} \right\}^{2} \right]^{\frac{1}{2}} \qquad (4.62)$$

What is needed is an estimate for the inner sum of (4.62) over k-2t = s, for each fixed $s \ge 1$. Let N = $\left[\frac{n-1}{2}\right]$.

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{k-2t=s}^{\tilde{\lambda}} h_{k}^{(\nu)} < \sum_{t=0}^{\tilde{\lambda}} h_{s+2t}^{(\nu)} \\ &= \frac{2^{\nu-\frac{1}{2}} \Gamma(\nu)}{\sqrt{\pi}} \sum_{t=0}^{\tilde{\lambda}} \left\{ \frac{(s+2t+\nu)\Gamma(s+2t+1)}{\Gamma(s+2t+2)} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \\ &= \frac{2^{\nu-\frac{1}{2}} \Gamma(\nu)}{\sqrt{\pi}} \sum_{t=0}^{\tilde{\lambda}} \left\{ \frac{s+2t}{s+2t+2\nu-1} \cdots \frac{s+1}{s+2\nu} \frac{(s+1)}{\Gamma(s+2\nu)} (s+2t+\nu) \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \\ &< \frac{2^{\nu-\frac{1}{2}} \Gamma(\nu)}{\sqrt{\pi}} \left\{ \frac{\Gamma(s+1)}{\Gamma(s+2\nu)} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{t=0}^{\tilde{\lambda}} (s+2t+\nu)^{\frac{1}{2}} \\ &= \frac{2^{\nu-\frac{1}{2}} \Gamma(\nu)}{3\sqrt{\pi}} \left\{ \frac{\Gamma(s+1)}{\Gamma(s+2\nu)} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2}} (s+n+\nu+1)} \end{aligned}$$
(4.63)

Since

$$\left(\frac{s+\nu-1}{h_{s-1}}\right)^{2} = \frac{\pi (s+\nu-1) \Gamma (s+2\nu-1)}{2^{2}\nu-1} + \frac{\pi (s+\nu-1) \Gamma (s+2\nu-1)}{2^{2}\nu-1} + \frac{\pi \Gamma (s+2\nu)}{(\nu) \Gamma (s)} + \frac{\pi \Gamma (s+2\nu)}{2^{2}\nu-1} + \frac{\pi \Gamma (s+2\nu)}{(\nu) \Gamma (s)} + \frac{\pi \Gamma (s+2\nu)}{(s+2\nu-1)} + \frac{\pi \Gamma (s+2\nu-1)}{(s+2\nu-1)} + \frac{\pi \Gamma (s+2\nu-1)}{(s+2$$

(4.63) and (4.64) in (4.62) imply

$$\left\{ \| s_{n}^{\prime} (v) \|_{2}^{(v)} \right\}^{2} < 4 \sum_{s=1}^{n} \left\{ \frac{\pi \Gamma(s+2v)}{2^{2v-1}\Gamma^{2}(v)\Gamma(s)} \right\} \left\{ \frac{2^{2v-1}\Gamma^{2}(v)\Gamma(s+1)}{9\pi \Gamma(s+2v)} + (s+n+v+1)^{3} \right\}$$

$$< \frac{4}{9} \sum_{s=1}^{n} (s+n+v+1)^{4}$$

$$< \frac{4}{45} (2n+v+2)^{5}$$

so that

$$\|s_{n}^{\prime}(v)\|_{2}^{(v)} < \frac{8}{3}\sqrt{\frac{2}{5}}\left(n + \frac{v}{2} + 1\right)^{\frac{5}{2}}$$
(4.65)

Finally, using (4.60), (4.61), and (4.65) in (3.51) concludes the proof of (4.55). A proof of (4.57) is unnecessary since the supremum norm is independent of ν and (4.32) holds for $\alpha = \beta = \nu - \frac{1}{2}$. This completes the proof.

Theorem 4.7 and Theorem 4.4 give an interesting comparison. We have

$$\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{p}^{(\nu+1)} \leq \|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{p}^{(\nu)}, \nu \geq \frac{1}{2}, p \geq 1$$
(4.66)
since $0 < (1-x^{2})^{\nu+1-\frac{1}{2}} = (1-x^{2})^{\nu+\frac{1}{2}} < (1-x^{2})^{\nu-\frac{1}{2}}$ provided

$$\geq \frac{1}{2}. \text{ Now, defining for } \nu \geq \frac{1}{2},$$

$$U_{n,p}^{(\nu)} = \max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_n^{\prime}\|_p^{(\nu+1)}}{\|\pi_n\|_p^{(\nu)}} \right\}, p \geq 1 \qquad (4.67)$$

and

$$V_{n,p}^{(\nu)} = \max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_n^{\prime}\|_p^{(\nu)}}{\|\pi_n\|_2^{(\nu)}} \right\}, \quad p \ge 1$$
(4.68)

we see that (4.66) implies that

$$U_{n,p}^{(v)} \leq V_{n,p}^{(v)}, \quad v \geq \frac{1}{2}, p \geq 1$$
 (4.69)

But much more than (4.69) can be said. Theorem 4.4 gives

$$U_{n,2p}^{(\nu)} < A_1^{(n+2\nu+1)} \qquad \begin{array}{c} 2+(\nu+\frac{1}{2})(1-\frac{1}{p})-\frac{1}{p} \\ \nu \geq \frac{1}{2}, n \geq 0, p = 2, 3, 4, \dots \end{array}$$

while Theorem 4.7 gives

$$V_{n,2p}^{(v)} < A_2(n+2v+1)^{2+(v+\frac{1}{2})(1-\frac{1}{p})}, v \ge \frac{1}{2}, n \ge 0, p = 2, 3, 4, ...$$

where the constants A_1 and A_2 can be taken independent of both n and p.

C. Laguerre Polynomials

Let $L_n^{(\alpha)}(x)$ be the n-th degree generalized Laguerre polynomial, $\alpha > -1$, as defined by Szegö [31, Chapter V]. These polynomials satisfy the orthogonality relation

$$\int_{0}^{\infty} L_{n}^{(\alpha)}(x) L_{m}^{(\alpha)}(x) x^{\alpha} e^{-x} dx = \frac{\delta_{n,m}}{\{g_{n}^{(\alpha)}\}^{2}}$$
(4.70)

where

$$g_{n}^{(\alpha)} = \left\{ \Gamma(1+\alpha) {\binom{n+\alpha}{n}} \right\}^{-\frac{1}{2}}$$
(4.71)

Let

$$S_{n}^{(\alpha)} = \sum_{k=0}^{n} (-1)^{k} g_{k}^{(\alpha)} L_{k}^{(\alpha)} (x)$$
(4.72)

Define the norms, for $\pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{p}^{(\alpha)} = \left\{ \int_{0}^{\infty} |\pi_{n}(x)|^{p} x^{\alpha} e^{-x} dx \right\}^{\frac{1}{p}}, p \ge 1$$
 (4.73)

Note that $\|\pi_n\|_{\infty}^{(\alpha)} = \infty$ for all nonconstant $\pi_n \in P_n$. Also,

the notation (4.72) and (4.73) should not be confused with earlier (identical) notation for the Gegenbauer polynomials.

Szegö [31, Problem 94] states that

$$(-1)^{k+m+n} \int_0^\infty L_k^{(\alpha)}(x) L_m^{(\alpha)}(x) L_n^{(\alpha)}(x) x^{\alpha} e^{-x} dx \ge 0 \qquad (4.74)$$

for all k,m,n = 0, 1, ... Since the expansion

$$(-1)^{n+m} L_{n}^{(\alpha)}(x) L_{m}^{(\alpha)}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n+m} C(k,m,n;\alpha) (-1)^{k} L_{k}^{(\alpha)}(x)$$

$$(4.75)$$

certainly exists, it is easy to see that (4.74) implies

$$C(k,m,n;\alpha) \geq 0 \qquad (4.76)$$

for all k,m,n = 0, 1, ... Watson [34] gives an explicit expression involving a hypergeometric function, but a simple form seems unavailable. Even for $\alpha = 0$, the formula for the coefficients seems rather complicated (see Gillis and Weiss [39]).

Szegö [31, Equation 5.1.14] gives

$$\frac{d}{dx} \left[(-1)^{n} L_{n}^{(\alpha)}(x) \right] = (-1)^{n-1} L_{n-1}^{(\alpha+1)}$$
(4.77)

and Bailey [5] attributes to Erdelyi the relation

$$x^{m}(-1)^{n}L_{n}^{(\alpha+m)}(x) = \frac{\Gamma(1+\alpha+m+n)}{n!} \sum_{k=0}^{m} \frac{(m)_{k}(n+k)!}{k!\Gamma(1+\alpha+n+k)}$$

$$\cdot (-1)^{n+k}L_{n+k}^{(\alpha)}(x) \qquad (4.78)$$

It is a simple matter to see that the appropriate Nonnegativity Conditions are satisfied in order to prove the next result. <u>Theorem 4.8</u> Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Let $\alpha > -1$. Then the equations (4.70)-(4.78) imply that for all $\pi_n \in P_n$, $\pi_n \ne 0$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{(\alpha)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha)}} \leq \sqrt{\max_{0 \leq k \leq n} g_{k}^{(\alpha)} \|L_{k}^{(\alpha)} S_{n}^{(\alpha)}\|_{p}^{(\alpha)}}$$
(4.79)

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{2p}^{(\alpha+1)}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}^{(\alpha)}} \leq \sqrt{\max_{1\leq k\leq n} g_{k}^{(\alpha)}} \|L_{k}^{\prime}|_{k}^{(\alpha)} S_{n}^{\prime}|_{p}^{(\alpha+1)}$$
(4.80)

$$\frac{\|\mathbf{x}\pi_{\mathbf{n}}^{\prime}\|_{2\mathbf{p}}^{(\alpha)}}{\|\pi_{\mathbf{n}}\|_{2}^{(\alpha)}} \leq \sqrt{\max_{0 \leq k \leq \mathbf{n}} g_{k}^{(\alpha)} \|\mathbf{L}_{k}^{\prime}(\alpha) \mathbf{s}_{\mathbf{n}}^{\prime}(\alpha)\|_{\mathbf{p}}^{(\alpha+2\mathbf{p})}}$$
(4.81)

Further information seems difficult to extract from Theorem 4.8 primarily because the polynomials are not essentially bounded with respect to $x^{\alpha}e^{-x}$, so that Corollaries 3.7 and 3.14, as well as Theorems 3.3 and 3.6, are not applicable. Since estimates for the higher norms of $L_n^{(\alpha)}(x)$ do not seem to be available, the utility of Theorem 4.8 seems limited.

Turán [32] proves that for $n \ge 1$

$$\max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_n^*\|_2^{(0)}}{\|\pi_n\|_2^{(0)}} \right\} = \frac{1}{2 \sin(\frac{\pi}{4n+2})}$$
(4.82)

where the norms in (4.82) are, of course, given by (4.73) and the maximum in (4.82) is attained only for nonzero constant multiples of

$$\pi_{n}(x) = \sum_{k=1}^{n} \sin\left(\frac{k\pi}{2n+1}\right) L_{k}^{(0)}(x)$$

We know of no other results related to (4.79) through (4.81).

D. Hermite Polynomials

Let $H_n(x)$ be the n-th degree Hermite polynomial, as defined by Szegö [31, Chapter V]. The Hermite polynomials satisfy the orthogonality relation

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-x^{2}} H_{n}(x) H_{m}(x) dx = \frac{\delta_{n,m}}{\{h_{n}\}^{2}}$$
(4.83)

where

$$h_{n} = \left\{ \sqrt{\pi} \ 2^{n} \ n! \right\}^{-\frac{1}{2}}$$
(4.84)

Let

$$S_{n}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n} h_{k}H_{k}(x)$$
 (4.85)

Lebedev [21, p. 96] gives the expansion

$$H_{n}(x)H_{m}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{\min(n,m)} 2^{k}k! {\binom{n}{k}}{\binom{n}{k}} H_{n+m-2k}(x)$$
(4.86)

and from Szegö [31, Equation 5.5.10],

$$\frac{d}{dx} H_{n}(x) = 2nH_{n-1}(x)$$
(4.87)

Define for all $\pi_n \in P_n$,

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{p} = \left\{ \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-x^{2}} |\pi_{n}(x)|^{p} dx \right\}^{\frac{1}{p}}, p \ge 1$$
 (4.88)

Theorem 4.9 Let $p \ge 1$ be an integer. Then, for all $\pi_n \in P_n, \pi_n \neq 0$,

$$\frac{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \leq \max_{0 \leq k \leq n} \sqrt{h_{k} \|H_{k}S_{n}\|_{p}}$$
(4.89)

$$\frac{\|\boldsymbol{\pi}_{n}^{\prime}\|_{2p}}{\|\boldsymbol{\pi}_{n}\|_{2}} \leq \max_{1 \leq k \leq n} \sqrt{2kh_{k}} \|\boldsymbol{H}_{k-1}\boldsymbol{S}_{n}^{\prime}\|_{p}$$
(4.90)

where the norms are defined by (4.88).

<u>Proof</u> The appropriate Nonnegativity Conditions are satisfied because of (4.86) and (4.87). Use Theorems 3.2 and 3.5.

The remarks concerning the limited utility of Theorem 4.8 apply here as well.

The only bound in the literature related to (4.89) or (4.90) seems to be one mentioned by Turan [32], who states that E. Schmidt [35] proves that

$$\max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{n} \in P_{n}}} \left\{ \frac{\|\pi_{n}^{\prime}\|_{2}}{\|\pi_{n}\|_{2}} \right\} = \sqrt{2n}$$
(4.91)

where the norms are, of course, given by (4.88). The maximum (4.91) is attained only for nonzero constant multiples of $H_n(x)$.

E. Remarks

In conclusion, there are two results of a general nature which can be useful in guaranteeing that the Nonnegativity Condition is satisfied. Let $p_0(x)$, $p_1(x)$, ..., be any sequence of orthogonal polynomials normalized so that $p_n(x) = x^n + \ldots$ Askey [3] proves that if

$$p_1(x)p_n(x) = p_{n+1}(x) + a_n p_n(x) + b_n p_{n-1}(x)$$
 (4.92)

holds for $n = 1, 2, ..., and if <math>a_n \ge 0, b_n > 0, and a_{n+1}$ $\ge a_n, b_{n+1} \ge b_n, then$

$$p_{n}(x)p_{m}(x) = \sum_{k=|n-m|}^{n+m} A_{k}p_{k}(x), A_{k} \ge 0$$
 (4.93)

holds for all n,m = 0, 1, ... Askey applies this result successfully to Laguerre, Hermite, Charlier, and Meixner polynomials.

In another direction, let $\omega(x)$ be a positive function on $(0,\infty)$ such that $\int_0^\infty x^n \omega(x) dx$ exists for $n = 0, 1, \ldots$. Let $\{p_n(x)\}$ be the orthonormal polynomials with respect to $\omega(x)$ standardized by $p_n(0) > 0$. This can be done since all the zeros of $p_n(x)$ are interior to $[0,\infty)$. Let $\{p_n^{(\alpha)}(x)\}$ be the polynomials orthonormal with respect to $x^{\alpha}\omega(x)$ and standardized by $p_n^{(\alpha)}(0) > 0$, where $\alpha \ge 1$ is a fixed integer. Then Askey [4] shows that

$$p_n^{(\alpha)}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^n \alpha_k p_k(x), \quad \alpha_k > 0$$
 (4.94)

for all n = 0, 1, ... Askey conjectures that (4.94) holds for any $\alpha > 0$.

Chapter V

REPRESENTATION THEOREM

A. Permutable Operators on $\otimes^p V$

In previous chapters, we have defined the operators $M_{n,p}$ in Lemma 2.1, $M_{n,p}^{(1)}$ in equation (2.73), $L_{n,p}^{\phi}$ in Lemma 3.2, and $E_{n,p}^{\phi}$ in Lemma 3.9. In this chapter, algebraic properties common to all these operators are studied and a Representation Theorem is proved (Theorem 5.8).

Let F be either \mathbb{R} or C. Let V be the vector space $\underset{XF}{\overset{n}{F}} = F^{n}$ equipped with the inner product

$$(\mathbf{x},\mathbf{y})_{\mathbf{V}} = \mathbf{\bar{y}}^{\mathrm{T}}\mathbf{x}, \qquad \mathbf{x},\mathbf{y} \in \mathbf{V}$$
 (5.1)

The earlier definition of $\Gamma = \Gamma_{n,p}$ in (2.15) is slightly altered in that the common index set {0, 1, 2, ..., n} is, in this chapter, replaced by {1, 2, ..., n}. Therefore, Γ has n^{p} elements. Lexicographic ordering is still defined here by (2.16). Let { e_{1} , ..., e_{n} } be the usual basis for V; that is, e_{k} hrs all zero components except the k-th component which is 1. Define the Kronecker product

$$\mathbf{e}_{\alpha}^{\otimes} = \mathbf{e}_{\alpha} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{e}_{\alpha} \in \overset{\mathbf{p}}{\mathbf{x}} \mathbf{F}^{\mathbf{n}} \cong \mathbf{F}^{\mathbf{n}^{\mathbf{p}}}$$

to be that vector with all zero components except the $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$ component which is 1. Let x_k $= \langle x_1^k, \ldots, x_n^{k,T} \in V, k = 1, \ldots, p$. Define their Kronecker product

$$x_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes x_p \in F^{n^p}$$

by

$$\mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p} = \sum_{\alpha = (\alpha_{1}, \dots, \alpha_{p}) \in \Gamma} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{1} \cdots \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{p}) \mathbf{e}_{\alpha}^{\otimes}$$
(5.2)

Define

$$\bigotimes^{\mathbf{p}} \mathbf{V} = \operatorname{Span} \{ \mathbf{e}_{\alpha}^{\bigotimes} : \alpha \in \Gamma_{n,p} \}$$
 (5.3)

Any element of $\otimes^p V$ of the form (5.2) is said to be decomposable. Any element of $\otimes^p V$ which cannot be written in the form (5.2) for some vectors x_1, \ldots, x_p in V is indecomposable. If $u \in \otimes^p V$ and $v \in \otimes^p V$, define the inner product by

$$(u,v) = \overline{v}^{\mathrm{T}} u \tag{5.4}$$

It is not hard to see that if $u = x_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes x_p$ and $v = y_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes y_p$, then

$$(u,v) = (x_1, y_1)_V \cdots (x_p, y_p)_V$$

= $\prod_{k=1}^{p} \bar{y}_k^T x_k$ (5.5)

Let S_p be the group of permutations on the integers $\{1, 2, \ldots, p\}$. For each $\sigma \in S_p$, define the permutation operator $P(\sigma)$ on $\otimes^p V$ via

$$P(\sigma)x_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes x_p = x_{\sigma^{-1}(1)} \otimes \cdots \otimes x_{\sigma^{-1}(p)}$$
(5.6)

for all decomposable elements $x_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes x_p$ in $\otimes^p V$. Since the basis elements $\{e_{\alpha}^{\otimes} : \alpha \in \Gamma\}$ of $\otimes^p V$ are decomposable, $P(\sigma)$ can be linearly extended to all $\otimes^p V$. That this extension of (5.6) yields a unique and well defined linear operator

on $\otimes^p V$ is proved by Marcus [23, Chapter 1]. Thus, for all $\sigma \in S_p$, $P(\sigma) \in \mathcal{L}(\otimes^p V)$, the space of all linear operators on $\otimes^p V$.

Let T $\in \mathcal{I}(V)$, the space of linear operators on V. Then define $\otimes^p T \in \mathcal{I}(\otimes^p V)$ via

$$\otimes^{p} \mathbf{T} \mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p} = (\mathbf{T}\mathbf{x}_{1}) \otimes \cdots \otimes (\mathbf{T}\mathbf{x}_{p}) \in \otimes^{p} \mathbf{V}$$
 (5.7)

for all decomposable elements in $\otimes^p V$. Since $\{e_{\alpha}^{\otimes} : \alpha \in \Gamma\}$ are decomposable, $\otimes^p T$ can be linearly extended to all $\otimes^p V$. That this extension yields an unambiguous operator on all $\otimes^p V$ is shown by Marcus [23, Chapter 2]. Let the matrix of T with respect to $\{e_1, \ldots, e_n\}$ be $[a_{i,j}]$ and let the matrix of $\otimes^p T$ with respect to $\{e_{\alpha}^{\otimes}, \alpha \in \Gamma\}$ be $[A_{\alpha,\beta}]$. Then Marcus shows that

$$A_{\alpha,\beta} = \prod_{k=1}^{p} a_{\alpha,\beta}$$
(5.8)

for all $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$, $\beta = (\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p) \in \Gamma$. Note that (5.8) merely states that the matrix of the Kronecker product operator $\otimes^p T$ is just the Kronecker product of the matrix of T with itself p times. (For a definition of Kronecker product of matrices, see Chapter II.)

Marcus [23, p. 245] defines $B \in \mathcal{I}(\otimes^{p} V)$ to be a bisymmetric operator if and only if

$$BP(\sigma) = P(\sigma)B, \quad \forall \sigma \in S$$
 (5.9)

Let B_p denote the totality of all bisymmetric operators on $\otimes^p V$. The matrix of $B \in B_p$ is denoted

$$B = [b_{\alpha,\beta}], \quad \alpha, \beta \in \Gamma$$
(5.10)
Marcus [23, Theorem 2.6] proves that $B \in \mathcal{B}_{p}$ if and only if,

for every $\sigma \in S_p'$,

$$\mathbf{b}_{\alpha,\beta} = \mathbf{b}_{\alpha\sigma,\beta\sigma}, \quad \alpha,\beta \in \Gamma \tag{5.11}$$

where $\alpha\sigma$ and $\beta\sigma$ are defined by

$$\alpha \sigma = (\alpha_1, \cdots, \alpha_p) \sigma = (\alpha_{\sigma(1)}, \cdots, \alpha_{\sigma(p)}) \in \Gamma$$

$$\beta \sigma = (\beta_1, \cdots, \beta_p) \sigma = (\beta_{\sigma(1)}, \cdots, \beta_{\sigma(p)}) \in \Gamma$$

$$(5.12)$$

A much deeper result is

<u>Theorem 5.1</u> A linear operator B on $\otimes^{P}V$ is bisymmetric if and only if B is a linear combination of Kronecker product operators $\otimes^{P}T$, $T \in \mathcal{J}(V)$. In other words,

$$B_{p} = \operatorname{Span}\{\otimes^{p} T : T \in \mathcal{I}(V)\}$$
(5.13)

Furthermore, in (5.13), T can be taken to be nonsingular.

Proof See Marcus [23, Theorem 2.7] and the remarks on page 249].

Up to now, we have presented only known results. We will now define and study an apparently new subspace of the bisymmetric operators B_p . We define an operator $L \in \mathcal{I}(\otimes^p V)$ to be a permutable operator if and only if

 $LP(\sigma) = P(\sigma)L = L,$ $\forall \sigma \in S_p$ (5.14) Let E_p be the space of all permutable operators on $\otimes^p V.$ Theorem 5.2 The symmetrizer S on $\otimes^{P} V$ is an element of E_{p} .

<u>Proof</u> The symmetrizer $S \in \mathcal{I}(\otimes^p V)$ is defined by (see Marcus [23, Theorem 2.6])

$$S = \frac{1}{p!} \sum_{\gamma \in S_{p}} P(\gamma)$$
(5.15)

Let $\sigma \in S_p$. Then

$$SP(\sigma) = \left(\frac{1}{p!} \sum_{\gamma \in S_{p}} P(\gamma)\right) P(\sigma)$$
$$= \frac{1}{p!} \sum_{\gamma \in S_{p}} P(\gamma\sigma)$$
(5.16)

where the last equation follows from Marcus [23, p. 72]. Since, for fixed $\sigma \in S_p$, $\{\gamma \sigma : \gamma \in S_p\} = S_p$, we see from (5.16) that

 $SP(\sigma) = S$

Similarly, $P(\sigma)S = S$ and this concludes the proof.

The next theorem is the analog of equation (5.11).

<u>Theorem 5.3</u> A linear operator L on $\otimes^{p}V$ is permutable if and only if, for every $\sigma, \gamma \in S_{p}$,

 $a_{\alpha,\beta} = a_{\alpha\sigma,\beta\gamma}, \qquad \alpha,\beta \in \Gamma$ (5.17)

where $[a_{\alpha,\beta}]$ is the matrix of L with respect to the basis $\{e_{\alpha}^{\otimes}, \alpha \in \Gamma\}.$

Proof We have

$$\mathbf{L}\mathbf{e}_{\beta}^{\otimes} = \sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} \mathbf{a}_{\alpha,\beta} \mathbf{e}_{\alpha}^{\otimes}$$
(5.18)

so that

$$P(\sigma) Le_{\beta}^{\otimes} = \sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} a_{\alpha,\beta} \left[P(\sigma) e_{\alpha}^{\otimes} \right]$$
$$= \sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} a_{\alpha,\beta} e_{\alpha\sigma}^{\otimes} -1$$
$$= \sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} a_{\alpha\sigma,\beta} e_{\alpha}^{\otimes}$$
(5.19)

Similarly, (5.18) gives

$$LP(\gamma)e_{\beta}^{\otimes} = L e_{\beta\gamma}^{\otimes} -1$$
$$= \sum_{\alpha \in \Gamma} a_{\alpha,\beta\gamma}^{-1} e_{\alpha}^{\otimes}$$
(5.20)

Since LP(γ) = L = P(σ)L, equating (5.19) and (5.20) gives, for all σ , $\gamma \in S_p$,

$$a_{\alpha\sigma,\beta} = a_{\alpha,\beta\gamma} - 1'$$
 $\alpha,\beta \in \Gamma$ (5.21)

In (5.21) replace β by $\beta\gamma$ to get

 $a_{\alpha\sigma,\beta\gamma} = a_{\alpha,\beta}$

and this completes the proof.

Marcus [23, p. 132] defines the completely symmetric space $V^{(p)}$ to be the range of the symmetrizer S defined by (5.15) and shows that

$$\dim V^{(p)} = \binom{n+p-1}{p}$$
(5.22)

Furthermore, S is idempotent; that is, $S^2 = S$. Therefore, u \in Range(S) = $V^{(p)}$ if and only if Su = u, if and only if $P(\sigma)u = u$ for all $\sigma \in S_p$. This last statement follows from the fact that $P(\sigma)S = S$ for all $\sigma \in S_p$. The next result was pointed out to the author by Herbert Robinson in a private conversation.

Theorem 5.4 $L \in \mathcal{L}(\otimes^{p} V)$ is a permutable operator if and only if

$$L(Null(S)) = \{0\}$$
 (5.23)

and

$$L(Range(S)) \subset V^{(p)}$$
(5.24)

<u>Proof</u> First, Let L be permutable. Let $u \in \otimes^{p} V$. Then $S(Lu) = \frac{1}{p!} \sum_{\sigma \in S_{p}} (P(\sigma)L)u$ $= \frac{1}{p!} \left(\sum_{\sigma \in S_{p}} L \right) u$ = Lu

and so Lu \in Range(S) = V^(p) which proves (5.24). Let u \in Null(S). Then Lu = (LS)u = L(Su) = 0 which proves (5.23). Conversely, suppose (5.23) and (5.24) hold. Let $\omega \in \bigotimes^p V$. Since S is hermitian, there exists u \in Range(S) = V^(p) and v \in Null(S) such that $\omega = u + v$. Then for all $\sigma \in S_p$, P(σ)u = u and P(σ)v \in Null(S), since SP(σ)v = P(σ)(Sv) = 0. Now

 $LP(\sigma)\omega = L(P(\sigma)u) + L(P(\sigma)v)$

$$= Lu + 0$$

$$= L(u + v)$$

Similarly, since $Lu \in V^{(p)}$ by (5.24),

 $P(\sigma)L\omega = P(\sigma)(Lu) + P(\sigma)(Lv)$ $= Lu + P(\sigma)(0)$ = Lu= L(u + v) $= L\omega$

Hence $L = P(\sigma)L = LP(\sigma)$ and so L is permutable.

Corollary 5.1 $L \in E_p$ implies that the rank of L is less than or equal to

 $\binom{n+p-1}{p}$

<u>Proof</u> Range (L) $\subset V^{(p)}$ and dim $V^{(p)}$ is $\binom{n+p-1}{p}$.

<u>Corollary 5.2</u> If $T \in \mathcal{J}(V)$ is nonsingular, $p \ge 2$ and $n \ge 2$, then $\otimes^{p}T \notin E_{p}$.

Proof Marcus [23, p. 54-63] shows that

 $rank[\otimes^{p}T] = (rank T)^{p} = n^{p}$

Since

 $n^{p} > {\binom{n+p-1}{p}}$, for $p \ge 2$ and $n \ge 2$ the rank of $\otimes^{p}T$ is too large to allow $\otimes^{p}T \in E_{p}$.

$$\frac{\text{Corollary 5.3}}{E_p} = \{ MS | M \in \mathcal{I}(V^{(p)}) \}$$
(5.25)

<u>Proof</u> Let $M \in \mathcal{I}(V^{(p)})$. Since $MS(Null(S)) = \{0\}$ and $MS(Range(S)) = M(V^{(p)}) \subset V^{(p)}$, we have, by Theorem 5.4,

$$E_p \supset \{MS | M \in \mathcal{L}(V^{(p)})\}$$

Now, to prove the reverse inclusion, let $L \in E_p$. Then SL = LS = L, so that $L\omega = LS\omega$ for all $\omega \in \otimes^p V$. Since S is the projection of $\otimes^p V$ onto $V^{(p)}$, we can always write

$$L\omega = MS\omega \in V^{(p)}$$

where M is the restriction of L to $V^{(p)}$. Thus, $M \in \mathcal{I}(V^{(p)})$. This concludes the proof.

The significance of this last corollary is twofold. First, it shows that the permutable operators are essentially general linear operators on $V^{(p)}$. Second, because of this general nature, not much can be said about the eigenstructure of permutable operators. Despite this, however, we do have the following theorem.

<u>Theorem 5.5</u> If L is a hermitian permutable operator on $\otimes^{p}V$, then L has at most n (= dim V) decomposable orthogonal eigenvectors in $\otimes^{p}V$ with nonzero eigenvalues.

<u>Proof</u> Let $u = x \otimes \cdots \otimes x_p \neq 0$ be such that $Lu = \lambda u$, $\lambda \neq 0$. We claim that $u_k = x_k \otimes \cdots \otimes x_k$ satisfies

 $Lu_{k} = \lambda u_{k}, \quad k = 1, \dots, p \quad (5.26)$ Since Range (L) $\subset V^{(p)}, x_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes x_{p} \in V^{(p)}$, so that for all $\sigma \in S_{p}$,

$$x_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes x_{p} = P(\sigma^{-1})x_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes x_{p}$$
$$= x_{\sigma(1)} \otimes \cdots \otimes x_{\sigma(p)}$$

Marcus [23, Theorem 2.3] implies that

$$x_k = c_k x_{\sigma(k)}, \quad k = 1, ..., p$$
 (5.27)

with

Clearly (5.27) implies

$$u_{k} = x_{k} \otimes \cdots \otimes x_{k} = \hat{c}_{k} x_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes x_{p},$$

$$k = 1, \dots, p \qquad (5.28)$$

for some $\hat{c}_k \neq 0$. From (5.28) follows (5.26). Now, let $v = y_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes y_p \neq 0$ be such that $Lv = \Lambda v$, $\Lambda \neq 0$. As before, we have

$$v_k = y_k \otimes \cdots \otimes y_k = \tilde{c}_k y_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes y_p, \ \tilde{c}_k \neq 0$$

and

$$Lv_{k} = \Lambda v_{k}, \quad k = 1, \ldots, p$$

Since L is hermitian, u and v may be taken orthogonal; that is, with C = $(\hat{c}_1 \tilde{c}_1)^{-1}$,

$$0 = (u, v) = C(x_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes x_1, y_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes y_1)$$
$$= C \prod_{k=1}^{p} (x_1, y_1)_{v}$$
$$= C \{ (x_1, y_1)_{v} \}^{p}$$

so that $x_1 \perp y_1$ in V. Therefore, any set of decomposable eigenvectors of L are such that the "first" vectors in any Kronecker product representation of these eigenvectors are pairwise orthogonal. Since dim V = n, there can be at most

n such eigenvectors which do not map to 0 under L. This completes the proof.

There exist "natural" candidates for the decomposable eigenvectors for a hermitian permutable operator L on $\otimes^p V$. Let

$$\lambda'_{n} = \max_{\mathbf{x} \in \mathcal{V}} \frac{(\mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}, \mathbf{L}\mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x})}{(\mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x})}$$

Clearly, λ_n' is well defined. Let $x_n \in V$ be any vector for which the maximum λ_n' is attained. Let

$$\lambda_{n-1}^{\prime} = \max_{\substack{x \in V \\ x \perp x_n}} \frac{(x \otimes \cdots \otimes x, Lx \otimes \cdots \otimes x)}{(x \otimes \cdots \otimes x, x \otimes \cdots \otimes x)}$$

and let $x_{n-1} \in V$ be any vector for which this maximum is attained. Continuing in this fashion, one generates the sequence of real numbers

$$\lambda_1' \leq \lambda_2' \leq \cdots \leq \lambda_n'$$

and the sequence $x_k \otimes \cdots \otimes x_k \in \otimes^p V$, k = 1, ..., n. Are the elements $x_k \otimes \cdots \otimes x_k$ the decomposable eigenvectors of L with corresponding eigenvalues λ'_k ? The answer is no, since L need not have any decomposable eigenvectors. On the other hand, we conjecture that if λ is an eigenvalue of L with a corresponding decomposable eigenvector, then $\lambda \in {\lambda'_1, \lambda'_2, \ldots, \lambda'_n}$.

Since a permutable operator $L \in \mathcal{J}(\otimes^{p} V)$ is also bisymmetric, L has the representation of Theorem 5.1. Specifically, there exists a smallest integer N \geq 1, and constants

 c_1, \ldots, c_N in F, and linear operators A_1, \ldots, A_N in $\mathcal{L}(V)$ such that

$$L = \sum_{k=1}^{N} c_k A_k \otimes \cdots \otimes A_k$$
p factors
(5.29)

where det $A_{k} = \pm 1, k = 1, ..., N.$

What more can be said of the matrices A_1, \ldots, A_N in (5.29)? One question is whether or not the matrices A_1 , \ldots, A_N in (5.29) are necessarily hermitian if L is hermitian. The example

$$L = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = A_1 \otimes A_1 + \frac{1}{2} A_2 \otimes A_2 - \frac{1}{2} A_3 \otimes A_3$$

where

$$A_1 = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, \quad A_2 = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}, \quad A_3 = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

gives the answer, since A_3 is not hermitian, provided only that N = 3 is the smallest number of matrices possible in this case. The proof that two matrices do not suffice is quite easy. However, we do not know that the representation (5.29) is, in any sense, unique. Therefore, it is still conceivable that there exist for this example three matrices which are hermitian and represent L.

<u>Theorem 5.6</u> Let L be a permutable operator on $\otimes^{p}V$, where $p = n = \dim V \ge 2$. Then any representation of L in the form (5.29) has the property

 $\sum_{k=1}^{N} c_k \det A_k = 0$

<u>Proof</u> Let $[a_{ij}^{(k)}]$ be the n × n matrix of A_k , k = 1, ..., N. Throughout this proof, let $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_p) \in \Gamma$ and $\beta = (\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p) \in \Gamma$. Since the $n^p \times n^p$ matrix of $A_k \otimes \cdots \otimes A_k$ is, from (5.8),

 $\begin{bmatrix} p & (k) \\ \Pi & \alpha_t, \beta_t \end{bmatrix}_{\alpha, \beta} \in \Gamma$

we have the matrix of L given by

 $\begin{bmatrix} N & p \\ \sum c_{k} & \Pi & a^{(k)} \\ k=1 & k & t=1 \\ \alpha & t, \beta \\ \beta & t \end{bmatrix} \alpha, \beta \in \Gamma$

By Theorem 5.3, for all σ , $\gamma \in S_p$,

$$\sum_{k=1}^{N} \begin{pmatrix} c_{k} & p_{\alpha(k)} \\ \pi_{k} = 1 & \alpha_{t}, \beta_{t} \end{pmatrix} = \sum_{k=1}^{N} \begin{pmatrix} c_{k} & p_{\alpha(k)} \\ \pi_{k} & \alpha_{\gamma(t)}, \beta_{\sigma(t)} \end{pmatrix}$$

so that

$$\sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \left(\begin{array}{c} p \\ \Pi a^{(k)}_{t=1} & - \begin{array}{c} \Pi a^{(k)}_{t=1} \\ t \\ t \\ t \end{array} \right) - \begin{array}{c} p \\ \Pi a^{(k)}_{\alpha}_{\gamma(t)} & \beta_{\sigma(t)} \end{array} = 0 \quad (5.30)$$

Since p = n, we can put $\alpha_1 = 1$, $\alpha_2 = 2$, ..., $\alpha_p = n$, and for $\gamma(1) = 1$, ..., $\gamma(p) = n$, (5.30) becomes

$$\sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \left(\begin{array}{c} p \\ \pi \\ t = 1 \end{array}^{(k)} - \begin{array}{c} p \\ \pi \\ t = 1 \end{array}^{(k)} \\ t = 1 \end{array}^{(k)} - \begin{array}{c} p \\ \pi \\ t = 1 \end{array}^{(k)} \\ t = 1 \end{array}^{(k)} = 0$$
(5.31)

Let σ be any odd permutation in S_p . Now, whenever the p-tuple $(\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p)$ is an even permutation of the first p integers, $(\beta_{\sigma(1)}, \ldots, \beta_{\sigma(p)})$ is an odd permutation. Therefore, summing (5.31) over all those coordinates $(\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p)$ which are even permutations of the first p integers,

$$0 = \sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \left\{ \sum_{\beta \text{ even}} \left(\prod_{t=1}^{p} a_{t,\beta_{t}}^{(k)} - \prod_{t=1}^{p} a_{t,\beta_{\sigma}(t)}^{(k)} \right) \right\}$$
$$= \sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \det A_{k}$$
(5.32)

where (5.32) follows by definition of the determinant of A_k and the fact that as β runs over all even permutations, $\beta\sigma$ must run over all odd permutations. This concludes the proof.

Theorem 5.6 can be extended to the case 1 .

<u>Theorem 5.7</u> Let L be a permutable operator on $\otimes^p V$, where 1 . Then any representation of L inthe form (5.29) has the property

$$\sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \det A_{k}^{(p)} = 0$$
 (5.33)

where the matrices $A_1^{(p)}$, ..., $A_N^{(p)}$ are any $p \times p$ submatrices of A_1 , ..., A_N , respectively, formed by elimination of the same n - p rows and n - p columns from each of the matrices A_1 , ..., A_N .

<u>Proof</u> Let r_1, \ldots, r_p and s_1, \ldots, s_p be the row and column indices, respectively, retained in the construction

of a particular set of $A_1^{(p)}$, ..., $A_N^{(p)}$. Equation (5.30) is still valid. Specialize (5.30) by taking $\alpha_1 = r_1$, ..., α_p = r_p and $\gamma(1) = 1$, ..., $\gamma(p) = p$, so that (5.30) becomes

$$\sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \begin{pmatrix} p \\ \Pi \\ t=1 \end{pmatrix} a_{t}^{(k)} - \prod_{t=1}^{p} a_{t}^{(k)} \\ t=1 \end{pmatrix} = 0$$
(5.34)

Now let σ be any odd permutation in S_p . Whenever the p-tuple $(\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p)$ is an even permutation of the first p integers, $(\beta_{\sigma(1)}, \ldots, \beta_{\sigma(p)})$ must be an odd permutation of the first p integers. Therefore, summing (5.34) over those coordinates $(\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_p)$ which are even permutations yields (5.33) and completes the proof.

B. The Representation Theorem for L_{2p} Norms

The algebraic properties of the preceding section yield a representation theorem for L_{2p} norms. The representation is given here in the context of Chapter III, but it is easily generalized to arbitrary finite dimensional spaces of measurable functions on which an L_{2p} norm can be defined.

<u>Theorem 5.8</u> (Representation Theorem) Let $\omega(t)$ be a Lebesgue measurable function defined on the real interval $(a,b), -\infty \le a < b \le \infty$, such that

$$0 < \int_{a}^{b} \omega(t) dt < \infty$$

Let P_n be a real subspace of $L_{2p}^{\omega}[a,b]$, for some integer $p \ge 1$, and let $\{h_0, h_1, \ldots, h_n\}$ be a basis for P_n . Then there exists an integer $N \ge 1$, and nonzero real constants

 $c_1, \ldots, c_N, and (n+1) \times (n+1)$ real matrices A_1, \ldots, A_N satisfying

det
$$A_k = \pm 1$$
, $k = 1, \dots, N$ (5.35)
such that, for all $\pi_n(t) = a_0 h_0(t) + a_1 h_1(t) + \cdots$

 $+ a_n h_n(t) \in P_n,$

$$\|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\omega} \equiv \left\{ c_{1}\left(\mathbf{x}^{T}A_{1}\mathbf{x}\right)^{p} + \cdots + c_{N}\left(\mathbf{x}^{T}A_{N}\mathbf{x}\right)^{p} \right\}^{\frac{1}{2p}}$$
(5.36)

where $x = \langle a_0 | a_1 \cdots a_n \rangle^T \in \mathbb{R}^{n+1}$ and the norm in (5.36) is given by (3.2). Furthermore, if 1 , then

$$\sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \det A_{k}^{(p)} = 0$$
 (5.37)

where $A_1^{(p)}$, ..., $A_N^{(p)}$ are any $p \times p$ submatrices of $A_1^{(p)}$, ..., $A_N^{(p)}$, respectively, formed by elimination of the same n-p+l rows and n-p+l columns from each of the matrices $A_1^{(p)}$, ..., $A_N^{(p)}$.

<u>Proof</u> First, we show that the operator L on $\otimes^p V$, $V = \mathbb{R}^{n+1}$, defined via the matrix

$$\begin{bmatrix} (\mathbf{h}_{\beta_1}\cdots\mathbf{h}_{\beta_p},\mathbf{h}_{\alpha_1}\cdots\mathbf{h}_{\alpha_p})_{\omega} \end{bmatrix}_{\alpha,\beta\in\Gamma}$$

is a permutable operator. Let $\sigma \in S_p$ and $\gamma \in S_p$. Since

$$(h_{\beta_{1}}\cdots h_{\beta_{p}},h_{\alpha_{1}}\cdots h_{\alpha_{p}})_{\omega} = (h_{\beta_{\sigma}(1)}\cdots h_{\beta_{\sigma}(p)},h_{\alpha_{\gamma}(1)}\cdots h_{\alpha_{\gamma}(p)})_{\omega}$$

Theorem 5.3 shows that L is permutable. From Theorem 5.1 and the representation (5.29) and equation (3.12),

$$\left\{ \|\pi_{n}\|_{2p}^{\omega} \right\}^{2p} = \left(\mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x} \right)^{T} \left(\mathbf{L} \mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x} \right)$$

$$= \left(\mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x} \right)^{T} \left(\sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \mathbf{A}_{k} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{A}_{k} \right)$$

$$\cdot \mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}$$

$$= \sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \left(\mathbf{x} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x} \right)^{T}$$

$$\cdot \left\{ (\mathbf{A}_{k}\mathbf{x}) \otimes \cdots \otimes (\mathbf{A}_{k}\mathbf{x}) \right\}$$

$$= \sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \left(\mathbf{x}^{T} \mathbf{A}_{k}\mathbf{x} \right) \cdots \left(\mathbf{x}^{T} \mathbf{A}_{k}\mathbf{x} \right)$$

$$= \sum_{k=1}^{N} c_{k} \left(\mathbf{x}^{T} \mathbf{A}_{k}\mathbf{x} \right)^{p}$$

Using Theorem 5.7 completes the proof.

<u>Remark</u> Theorem 5.8 is stated for the real case, but it could just as easily have been stated for the complex case instead.

Theorem 5.8 raises an interesting question. Do there exist representations of the form (5.36) satisfying (5.35) but not (5.37)? The operator L defined in the proof of Theorem 5.8 gives rise to a representation (5.36) which necessarily must satisfy (5.37). So the question may be recast in the following manner. Does a representation (5.36) necessarily lead to a representation of the operator L? The answer is no. Let $x = \langle a | b \rangle^T \in \mathbb{R}^2$. Then

136

$$\left\{\int_{0}^{1} (a + bt)^{4} dt\right\}^{\frac{1}{4}} = \left\{x \otimes x^{T} L x \otimes x\right\}^{\frac{1}{4}}$$

where

$$L = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1/2 & 1/2 & 1/3 \\ 1/2 & 1/3 & 1/3 & 1/4 \\ 1/2 & 1/3 & 1/3 & 1/4 \\ 1/3 & 1/4 & 1/4 & 1/5 \end{bmatrix}$$

(We note that L resembles the Hilbert matrix.) Clearly L is permutable, and a computation shows that

$$\mathbf{x} \otimes \mathbf{x}^{\mathrm{T}} \mathbf{L} \mathbf{x} \otimes \mathbf{x} = \sum_{k=1}^{5} c_{k} (\mathbf{x}^{\mathrm{T}} \mathbf{A}_{k} \mathbf{x})^{2}$$

where

$$c_{1}, \dots, c_{5} = \frac{1}{4}, -\frac{1}{40}, -\frac{1}{40}, \frac{31}{40}, -\frac{87}{240}$$

$$A_{1}, \dots, A_{5} = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

Since

$$\sum_{k=1}^{5} c_{k} \det A_{k} = -\frac{201}{240} \neq 0$$

we know that, by Theorem 5.6,

$$L \neq \sum_{k=1}^{5} c_k A_k \otimes A_k$$

It would be interesting to know what the correct (i.e., smallest) value of N is here. By direct example, it can be shown that $N \leq 7$, but whether or not 7 matrices are required is an open question.
Do there exist $L \in \mathcal{I}(\mathscr{P}^{\mathsf{V}})$ such that

$$(x_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes x_p, L x_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes x_p) > 0$$
 (5.38)

for all $x_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes x_p \in \bigotimes^p V$ and yet L is not positive definite on $\bigotimes^p V$? The answer is yes for $p \ge 2$ and $n \ge 1$. In fact, L can be taken to be a permutable operator as well. Examples are the operators L defined in the proof of Theorem 5.8, which satisfy (5.38) and cannot be positive definite because the rank of L must be less than $(n+1)^p$ for $p \ge 2$ and $n \ge 1$, by Corollary 5.1. (Incidentally, L is positive semidefinite by Theorem 3.3.)

C. Open Approximation Questions in &V

We end this chapter with two conjectures and some open questions. Let L be a hermitian permutable operator on $\otimes^{p} V$. Then the Rayleigh quotient

$$\max_{\substack{\mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p}}} \frac{(\mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p}, \mathbf{L} \times_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p})}{(\mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p}, \mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p})}$$
(5.39)

is certainly bounded above by the spectral radius of L. We conjecture that (5.39) can be computed by the Quadratic Relaxation Algorithm of Chapter VI, modified slightly in equations (6.5) through (6.9) to accommodate the more general form (5.39). We also conjecture that the Rayleigh quotient

$$\max_{\substack{\mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p}}} \frac{(\mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p}, \mathbf{L} \mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p})}{(\mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p}, \mathbf{M} \mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p})}$$
(5.40)

can also be computed by a Quadratic Relaxation Algorithm patterned after the one in Chapter VI, where both L and M

in (5.40) are permutable operators on $\otimes^p V$ with M satisfying the condition (5.38).

Finally, we ask the following approximation questions. Let $v_0 \in \otimes^p V$ be any element of $\otimes^p V$. What can be said about

$$\epsilon_{0} = \min_{\substack{\mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p} \in \bigotimes^{p} \mathbf{V}}} \|\mathbf{v}_{0} - \mathbf{x}_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_{p}\|$$
(5.41)

where the norm in (5.41) is defined via the inner product (5.4)? Clearly, if v_0 is decomposable, then $\varepsilon_0 = 0$. In a somewhat different vein, we can ask, "How dense is the set of decomposable elements in the unit sphere of $\otimes^p V$?" Specifically, what can be said about

$$\varepsilon = \max \min \| \mathbf{v}_0 - \mathbf{x}_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_p \| \quad (5.42)$$
$$\mathbf{v}_0 \in \mathbb{S}^p \mathbf{V} \quad \mathbf{x}_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_p \in \mathbb{S}^p \mathbf{V} \\ \| \mathbf{v}_0 \| \le 1 \quad \| \mathbf{x}_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{x}_p \| \le 1$$

and is ε different from

 $\varepsilon' = \max \{\varepsilon_0\} ? \qquad (5.43)$ $v_0 \in \mathscr{P}V$ $\|v_0\| \le 1$

These questions seem to be difficult.

Chapter VI

QUADRATIC RELAXATION ALGORITHM

A. The Algorithm

We propose, without proof of convergence, an algorithm for the computation of $\pi_n^* \in P_n$ such that

$$R_{n,2p} = \max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n \\ 0 \neq \pi_n \in P_n}} \frac{\|D\pi_n\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\pi_n\|_{2}^{\omega}}$$
(6.1)

$$= \frac{\|D\pi_n^*\|_{2p}^{\Phi}}{\|\pi_n^*\|_{2}^{\omega}}, \qquad p = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$
 (6.2)

where D is a linear transformation as specified below. The algorithm is presented in the context of Chapter III, but without assuming the Nonnegativity Condition. It can be adapted in an obvious manner to a more general setting in abstract measure spaces. Alternatively, it can be adapted easily to more general algebraic settings as mentioned at the end of Chapter V.

Let P_n be a subspace of $L_2^{\omega}[a,b] \cap L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$, for some integer $p \ge 1$, where $\omega(x) > 0$ and $\phi(x) > 0$ a.e. on the intervals (a,b) and (c,d), respectively, and satisfy the conditions (3.1). Let $D:P_n + L_{2p}^{\phi}[c,d]$ be an arbitrary linear transformation on P_n . The norms in (6.1) above are defined by (3.2). We will be keeping n fixed throughout this discussion, so we modify our notation to allow π , π_1 , ..., π_p to be arbitrary functions in P_n . Lemma 6.1 For n = 0, 1, 2, ... and p = 1, 2, 3, ...,

$$(R_{n,2p})^{2p} = \max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{j} \in P_{n} \\ j=1,2,\dots,p}} \left\{ \frac{ \int_{c}^{d} \frac{p}{\Pi} |D\pi_{j}(x)|^{2} \phi(x) dx}{ \frac{p}{\Pi} \int_{a}^{b} |\pi_{j}(x)|^{2} \omega(x) dx} \right\}$$
(6.3)

$$\max_{\substack{0\neq\pi\in\mathcal{P}_{n}}} \frac{\int_{c}^{d} |D\pi(x)|^{2p} \phi(x) dx}{\left[\int_{a}^{b} |\pi(x)|^{2} \omega(x) dx\right]^{p}}$$

$$\leq \max_{\substack{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{j} \in P_{n} \\ j=1, \dots, p}}} \frac{\int_{c}^{d} \prod_{j=1}^{p} |D\pi_{j}(x)|^{2} \phi(x) dx}{\prod_{j=1}^{p} \int_{a}^{b} |\pi_{j}(x)|^{2} \omega(x) dx} \qquad (6.4.1)$$

$$\leq \max_{\substack{\substack{0 \neq \pi_{j} \in P_{n} \\ j=1, \dots, p}}} \prod_{j=1}^{p} \left[\frac{\left(\int_{c}^{d} |D\pi_{j}(x)|^{2p} \phi(x) dx\right)^{\frac{1}{p}}}{\int_{a}^{b} |\pi_{j}(x)|^{2} \omega(x) dx} \right] \qquad (6.4.2)$$

$$\leq \max_{\substack{j=1 \ 0 \neq \pi_{j} \in P_{n}}} \left[\frac{\left(\int_{c}^{d} |D\pi_{j}(x)|^{2p} \phi(x) dx\right)^{\frac{1}{p}}}{\int_{a}^{b} |\pi_{j}(x)|^{2} \omega(x) dx} \right] \qquad (6.4.3)$$

$$= \max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi \in P_{n}}} \frac{\int_{c}^{d} |D\pi(x)|^{2p} \phi(x) dx}{\left[\int_{a}^{b} |\pi(x)|^{2} \omega(x) dx \right]^{p}}$$

where Lemma 3.1 was used in (6.4.2). Hence the inequalities (6.4.1), (6.4.2), and (6.4.3) are in fact equalities and this concludes the proof.

The Quadratic Relaxation Algorithm is based on Lemma 6.1.

Algorithm (Quadratic Relaxation)

(1) Let $\pi_1^{(0)}$, $\pi_2^{(0)}$, ..., $\pi_p^{(0)}$ be any given nonzero functions in P_n , and define

$$T^{(0)} = \frac{\int_{c}^{d} \prod_{j=1}^{p} |D\pi_{j}^{(0)}(x)|^{2} \phi(x) dx}{\prod_{j=1}^{p} \int_{a}^{b} |\pi_{j}^{(0)}(x)|^{2} \omega(x) dx}$$
(6.5)

Set k = 0 and r = 1.

(2) Given $\pi_1^{(k)}$, $\pi_2^{(k)}$, ..., $\pi_p^{(k)}$ in P_n , and $1 \le r \le p$, fine

define

$$\mathbf{T}^{(k+1)} = \max_{\substack{0 \neq \pi \in P_{n} \\ m(k) \\$$

where

$$w^{(k)}(x) = \prod_{\substack{j=1\\ j \neq r}}^{p} |D\pi_{j}^{(k)}(x)|^{2} \phi(x)$$
(6.7)

$$M^{(k)} = \prod_{\substack{j=1 \\ j \neq r}}^{p} \int_{a}^{b} |\pi_{j}^{(k)}(x)|^{2} \omega(x) dx$$
(6.8)

Let $\tilde{\pi}$ be any nonzero polynomial for which the ratio in (6.6) attains its maximum. Define

$$\pi_{j}^{(k+1)} = \begin{cases} \tilde{\pi}, & \text{if } j = r \\ \pi_{j}^{(k)}, & \text{if } j \neq r \end{cases}$$
(6.9)

(3) Increase k by 1. Replace r by

$$r - \left[\frac{r}{p}\right]p + 1$$

where [] denotes the greatest integer function.

(4) Go to step (2).

The sequence $T^{(k)}$, k = 0, 1, 2, ..., generated by the algorithm certainly has a limit since

$$T^{(0)} \leq T^{(1)} \leq T^{(2)} \leq \cdots \leq R_{n,2p}^{2p}$$
 (6.10)

which follows directly from (6.6) and (6.3). Also, for each j = 1, 2, ..., p, the normalized sequence

$$\left\{ \frac{\pi_{j}^{(k)}}{\|\pi_{j}^{(k)}\|_{2}^{\omega}}, \quad k = 0, 1, 2, \dots \right\}$$
(6.11)

must have at least one limit point. Let S, be the set of limit points of (6.11), and define

$$S_j = \{ \varepsilon l \mid l \in S_j \text{ and } |\varepsilon| = 1 \}$$

Then there exists

$$\hat{\pi} \in S_1 \cap S_2 \cap \cdots \cap S_p \subset P_n \tag{6.12}$$

The proof of (6.12) is an immediate consequence of Lemma 3.1 and the definition of $\tilde{\pi}$ in (6.9). In essence, (6.12) states that each of the p sequences of polynomials defined by (6.11) has a subsequence which converges to $\hat{\pi}$. Unfortunately, this is not enough to assert that $\hat{\pi}$ is an extremal polynomial for $R_{n}, 2p$.

<u>Conjecture</u> If $\hat{\pi} \in S_1 \cap \cdots \cap S_p$, then

$$R_{n,2p} = \frac{\|D\hat{\pi}\|_{2p}^{\phi}}{\|\hat{\pi}\|_{2}^{\omega}} = \lim_{k \to \infty} T^{(k)}$$
(6.13)

If the extremal polynomial π^* for $R_{n,2p}$ is unique up to constant multiples, then we further conjecture that

$$\lim_{k \to \infty} \frac{\pi_{j}^{(k)}}{\|\pi_{j}^{(k)}\|_{2}^{\omega}} = \hat{\pi} = \pi^{*}, j = 1, 2, ..., p \qquad (6.14)$$

B. Computational Considerations

Before proceeding to an example, some remarks on the solution of (6.6) are in order. Let

$$\pi(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{r=0}^{n} a_{r}h_{r}(\mathbf{x})$$

and let $a = \langle a_0 | a_1 \cdots | a_n \rangle^T \in \mathbb{C}^{n+1}$. Then we have

$$\mathbf{T}^{(k+1)} = \frac{1}{M^{(k)}} \max_{\mathbf{a} \in \mathbf{C}} \left\{ \frac{\mathbf{a}^{\mathrm{T}} \mathbf{A} \mathbf{a}}{\mathbf{a}^{\mathrm{T}} \mathbf{B} \mathbf{a}} \right\}$$
(6.15)

where A and B are hermitian matrices of dimension (n+1)× (n+1), and B is positive definite. Explicitly, letting A = $[a_{ij}]$ and B = $[b_{ij}]$, we have

$$a_{ij} = \int_{c}^{d} Dh_{j}(x) \overline{Dh_{i}(x)} W^{(k)}(x) dx$$
 (6.16)

$$b_{ij} = \int_{a}^{b} h_{j}(x) \overline{h_{i}(x)} \omega(x) dx \qquad (6.17)$$

Since $W^{(k)}(x)$ is a known function, by definition of the algorithm, the matrices A and B can be found explicitly.

It is well known (see, e.g., [13]) that the ratio of hermitian forms (6.15) is maximized by the largest eigenvalue of the eigenproblem

$$Aa = \lambda Ba \tag{6.18}$$

and that all the eigenvalues of (6.18) are nonnegative. Let λ_{max} be the largest eigenvalue of (6.18). Then it is also well known [13] that

$$\frac{\bar{a}^{T}Aa}{\bar{a}^{T}Ba} = \lambda_{max}$$
(6.19)

if and only if $a \neq 0$ lies in the eigenspace of λ_{max} . Thus we can find the coefficients of $\tilde{\pi}$ in (6.9) by computing any vector ($\neq 0$) in the eigenspace of the largest eigenvalue of (6.18).

The eigenproblem (6.18) is equivalent to the eigenproblem

 $B^{-1}Aa = \lambda a \tag{6.20}$

Numerically, however, solving (6.20) leads to annoying difficulties. Although A and B are both hermitian, the product $B^{-1}A$ is not, in general, hermitian. Therefore, to solve (6.20) on a computer, one has to use a computer program for solving the eigenproblem of a general complex matrix. Numerical roundoff in the computation of the product $B^{-1}A$ then yields computed eigenvalues which are not strictly real. To avoid this difficulty, it is better to solve the eigenproblem by another method. Martin and Wilkinson [25] give an efficient

method for solving (6.18) when A and B are real symmetric matrices. It is easy to see how to modify their method to adapt it to the case A and B hermitian.

Incidentally, it can be shown [13] that if A and B are real, then the eigenvectors can be taken to be real as well. Therefore, if the Conjecture is true, then there exist extremal polynomials of $R_{n,2p}^{(k)}$ defined by (1.6) having real coefficients.

C. Example

We apply the Quadratic Relaxation Algorithm to the maximum problem

$$R = \max_{\substack{a_0, a_1, a_2 \in \mathbb{R}}} \frac{\left\{ \int_{1}^{3/2} |a_0 + a_1 x + a_2 x^2|^6 dx \right\}^{\frac{1}{6}}}{\left\{ \int_{-1}^{1} |a_0 + a_1 x + a_2 x^2|^2 dx \right\}^{1/2}}$$
(6.21)

Define, for $a = (a_0, a_1, a_2) \in \mathbb{R}^3$,

$$F(x;a) = |a_0 + a_1 x + a_2 x^2|^2$$
 (6.22)

Recalling Lemma 6.1, we have

$$R = \max_{a,b,c \in \mathbb{R}^{3}} \left\{ \frac{\int_{1}^{3/2} F(x;a)F(x;b)F(x;c)dx}{\int_{-1}^{1} F(x;a)dx \int_{-1}^{1} F(x;b)dx \int_{-1}^{1} F(x;c)dx} \right\}^{\frac{1}{6}}$$
(6.23)

The Quadratic Relaxation Algorithm is easy to apply. At each step we compute the matrices in (6.15) via (6.16) and (6.17). Although these integrals can be computed explicitly, we prefer to approximate them numerically by the trapezoidal rule. Specifically, the integral (6.16) is replaced by

$$a_{ij} = \frac{\frac{1}{2}}{N-1} \sum_{r=1}^{N} Dh_{j}(x_{r}) \overline{Dh_{i}(x_{r})} W^{(k)}(x_{r})$$
(6.24)

where N = 500 and +1 = x_1 , ..., x_N = 3/2 are equispaced in [1, 3/2]. Similarly, the integral (6.17) is replaced by

$$b_{ij} = \frac{2}{N-1} \sum_{r=1}^{N} h_j(y_r) \overline{h_i(y_r)} \omega(x_r)$$
(6.25)

where N = 500 and $-1 = y_1, \ldots, y_N = +1$ are equispaced in [-1,+1]. The prime on the summation signs in (6.24) and (6.25) means that the first and last terms are taken with weight 1/2. In this example, of course, the operator D in (6.24) is the identity operator and the basis functions {h₀, h₁, h₂} are {1, x, x²}.

Starting with the vectors

$$a^{(0)} = (-3, -2, -1)$$

 $b^{(0)} = (-2, -1, 0)$
 $c^{(0)} = (-1, 0, 1)$

we get, for the first three steps in the Quadratic Relaxation Algorithm,

| a (1) | = | (26238420, | +.21498490, | +.94071037) |
|------------------|---|------------------|-------------|-------------|
| ь ⁽¹⁾ | = | b ⁽⁰⁾ | | |
| c ⁽¹⁾ | = | c ⁽⁰⁾ | | |
| т(1) | = | 5.2856113 | | |
| a ⁽²⁾ | - | a ⁽¹⁾ | | |
| b ⁽²⁾ | = | (26378420, | +.21190785, | +.94106987) |
| (2) | - | - ⁽¹⁾ | | |

$$T^{(2)} = 75.203450$$

$$a^{(3)} = a^{(2)}$$

$$b^{(3)} = b^{(2)}$$

$$c^{(3)} = (-.26120187, +.21748675, +.94046430)$$

$$T^{(3)} = 1601.0732$$

We used the convergence criterion

$$0 \leq T^{(k+1)} - T^{(k)} < 10^{-6}$$

and found that the algorithm converged in the eighth step to

$$a^{(8)} = (-.26118456, +.21752387, +.94046053)$$

 $b^{(8)} = a^{(8)}$
 $c^{(8)} = a^{(8)}$
 $T^{(8)} = 1601.3516$

If the algorithm has converged to an extremal polynomial, then we have

 $R = 3.4204332 = (1601.3516)^{\frac{1}{6}}$

and is attained by the extremal polynomial

 $\pi^*(\mathbf{x}) = .94046053\mathbf{x}^2 + .21752387\mathbf{x} - .26118456$

The algorithm converged to the polynomial π^* for every set of initial vectors a⁽⁰⁾, b⁽⁰⁾, and c⁽⁰⁾ that was tried. All computations were performed on a Univac 1108 in single precision which gives 8 or 9 significant decimal digits, although the summations (6.24) and (6.25) to compute the matrices of the eigenproblems (6.15) were accumulated in double precision which gives 18 or 19 significant decimal digits.

Bibliography

- Abramowitz, M., and Stegun, I. A., Editors, <u>Handbook of</u> <u>Mathematical Functions</u>, National Bureau of Standards Applied Mathematics Series, vol. 55 (U. S. Government Printing Office, Washington, D. C., 1972, Tenth Printing).
- 2. Amir, D., and Zeigler, Z., "Polynomials of extremal L_p norm on the L_{∞} -unit sphere," Journal of Approximation Theory, vol. 18 (Sept. 1976), pp 86-98.
- 3. Askey, R., "Linearization of the product of orthogonal polynomials," in <u>Problems in Analysis</u>, edited by R. Gunning, Princeton University Press, Princeton, N. J., 1970, pp 223-228.
- 4. _____, "Orthogonal expansions with positive coefficients," Proceedings of the American Mathematical Society, vol. 16 (1965), pp 1191-1194.
- 5. Bailey, W. N., "On the product of two Laguerre polynomials," Quarterly Journal of Mathematics, vol. 10 (1939), pp 60-66.
- 6. Bell, E. T., "Interpolated denumerants and Lambert series," American Journal of Mathematics, vol. 65 (1943), pp 382-386.
- 7. Bleistein, N., and Handelsman, R. A., <u>Asymptotic Expansions</u> of Integrals (Holt, Rinehard and Winston, New York, 1975).

- 8. Bromwich, T. J. I., <u>An Introduction to the Theory of</u> <u>Infinite Series</u>, Second Edition Revised (Macmillan and Co., London, 1949).
- 9. Černyh, N. I., "On some extremal problems for polynomials," in <u>Extremal Properties of Polynomials</u>, edited by S. B. Stěckin, Proceedings of the Steklov Institute of Mathematics, Number 78 (1965) (Translated by R. P. Boas and published by American Mathematical Society, Providence, R. I., 1967).
- 10. Erdelyi, A., Editor, <u>Higher Transcendental Functions</u>, vol. II (McGraw-Hill, New York, 1953).
- 11. Feller, W., <u>An Introduction to Probability Theory and Its</u> <u>Applications</u>, vol. 1 (John Wiley and Sons, New York, 1950).
- 12. Friedman, Avner, <u>Partial Differential Equations</u> (Holt, Rinehart and Winston, New York, 1969).
- 13. Gantmacher, F. R., <u>The Theory of Matrices</u>, vol. I (Chelsea Publishing Company, New York, 1960).
- 14. Gasper, George, "Linearization of the product of Jacobi polynomials II," Canadian Journal of Mathematics, vol. 22 (1970), pp 582-593.
- 15. Gilbert, E. N., and Slepian, D., "Doubly orthogonal concentrated polynomials," SIAM Journal of Mathematical Analysis, vol. 8, Number 2 (April, 1977), pp 290-319.
 16. Hahn, Wolfgang, "Über die Jacogischen Polynome und zwei verwandte Polynomklassen," Mathematische Zeitschrift, vol. 39 (1935), pp 634-638.

17. Handelsman, R. A., and Lew, J. S., "On the convergence of the L^p norm to the L[∞] norm," The American Mathematical Monthly, vol. 79 (June-July, 1972), pp 618-622.

18. Hardy, G. H., Littlewood, J. E., and Polya, G., <u>Inequalities</u> (Cambridge University Press, London, 1967).

- 19. Jolley, L. B. W., <u>Summation of Series</u>, Second Revised Edition (Dover Publications, New York, 1961).
- 20. Krall, H. L., "On derivatives of orthogonal polynomials," Bulletin of the American Mathematical Society, vol. 42 (1936), pp 423-428.
- 21. Lebedev, N. N., Special Functions and Their Applications (Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, N. J., 1965).
- 22. MacMahon, P. A., <u>Combinatory Analysis</u>, vol. I (Chelsea Publishing Co., New York, 1960).
- 23. Marcus, M., <u>Finite Dimensional Multilinear Algebra</u>, Part I (Marcel Dekker, New York, 1973).
- 24. Marcus, M., and Minc, H., <u>A Survey of Matrix Theory and</u> <u>Matrix Inequalities</u> (Prindle, Weber and Schmidt, London, 1964).
- 25. Martin, R. S., and Wilkinson, J. H., "Reduction of the symmetric eigenproblem $Ax = \lambda Bx$ and related problems to standard form," Numer. Math., vol. 11 (1968), pp 99-110.
- 26. Miller, W., "Special functions and the complex Euclidean group in 3-space II," Journal of Mathematical Physics, vol. 9 (1968), pp 1175-1187.

- 27. Nuttall, A. H., "Numerical evaluation and asymptotic expansion of the sinc function for k integer," NUSC/NL Technical Memorandum Number 2020-230-70, 10 December 1970 (Naval Underwater Systems Center, New London Laboratory, New London, Connecticut).
- 28. Pfister, Albrecht, "Hilbert's seventeenth problem and related problems on definite forms," in <u>Mathematical</u> <u>Developments Arising from Hilbert Problems</u>, Proceedings of the Symposium in Pure Mathematics, vol. 28, edited by Felix Browder (American Mathematical Society, Providence, R. I., 1976).
- 29. Pólya, G., and Szegö, G., <u>Problems and Theorems in Analy-</u> <u>sis</u>, vol. I (Springer-Verlag, New York, 1970, Fourth Edition).
- 30. Riordan, John, <u>An Introduction to Combinatorial Analysis</u> (John Wiley and Sons, New York, 1958).
- 31. Szegö, Gabor, <u>Orthogonal Polynomials</u>, American Mathematical Society Colloquium Publications, vol. 23 (American Mathematical Society, Providence, R. I., 1975, Fourth Edition).
- 32. Turán, P., "Remark on a theorem of Erhard Schmidt," Mathematica, vol. 2 (1960), pp 373-378.
- 33. Vilenkin, N. Ja., <u>Special Functions and the Theory of</u> <u>Group Representations</u>, Translations of Mathematical Monographs, vol. 22 (American Mathematical Society, Providence, R. I., 1968).

34. Watson, G. N., "A note on the polynomials of Hermite and Laguerre," Journal of the London Mathematical Society, vol. 13 (1938), pp 29-32.

35. Schmidt, Erhard, "Über die nebst ihren Ableitungen orthogonalen Polynomensysteme und das zugehörige Extremum," Math. Annalen, vol. 119, pp 165-204.

- 36. Jackson, D., "Bernstein's theorem and trigonometric approximation," Transactions of the American Mathematical Society, vol. 40 (1936), pp 225-251.
- 37. Bari, N. K., "Generalization of the inequalities of S. N. Bernstein and A. A. Markov," Izv. Akad. Nauk SSSR Ser. Mat., vol. 18 (1954), pp 159-176 (Russian).
- 38. Videnskii, V. S., "Extremal estimates for the derivative of a trigonometric polynomial on an interval shorter than its period," Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR, vol. 130 (1960), pp 13-16 = Soviet Math. Dokl., vol. 1 (1960), pp 5-8.
- 39. Gillis, J., and Weiss, G., "Products of Laguerre Polynomials," Mathematics of Computation, vol. 14 (1960), pp 60-63.

TR 5915

INITIAL DISTRIBUTION LIST

्

| CIM |
|--|
| DARPA |
| NRL |
| NAVELECSYSCOM, PME-124 |
| NAVSEASYSCOM |
| NAVAIRDEVCEN |
| NAVWPNSCEN |
| DTNSRDC |
| CTVENGRI AB |
| NAVOCEANSYSCEN, Code 6565 |
| NAVSEC SEC-6034 |
| NAVPGSCOL |
| NAVWARCOL |
| API /IW SFATTI F |
| ARI / PENN STATE STATE COLLEGE |
| ARE INTE OF Texas |
| CENTER FOR NAVAL ANALYSES (ACOULSTITION LINIT) |
| DDC ALEXANDRIA |
| MADINE DHYSICAL LAR SCRIDDS |
| NAA/EDI |
| NATIONAL DESEADER COUNCIL (COMMITTEE UNDERSEA WADEADE) |
| WOODS HOLE OCEANOCODADUTE INSTITUTION |
| |
| JALLANT AJW REJEARUN LENTER |